This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

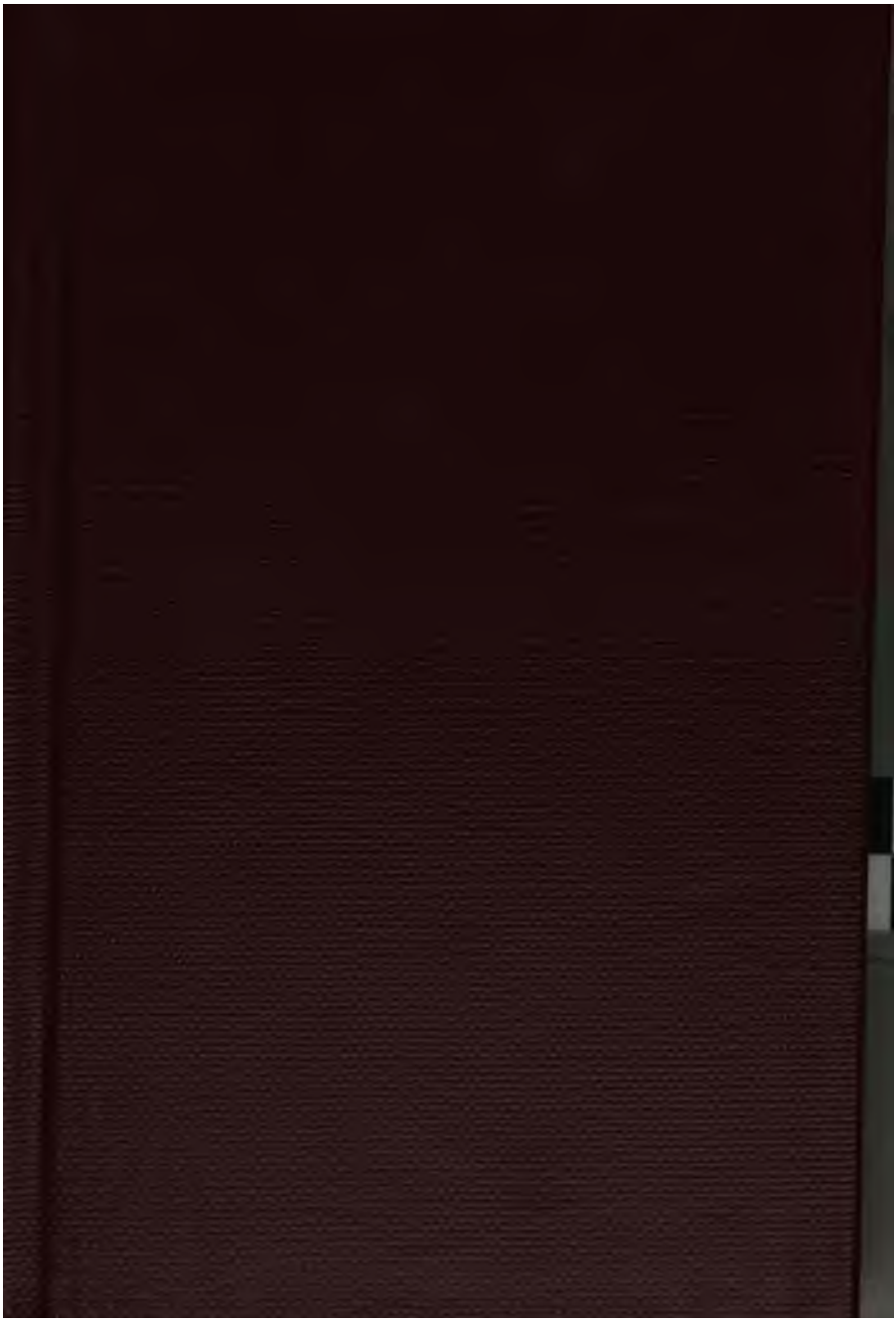
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

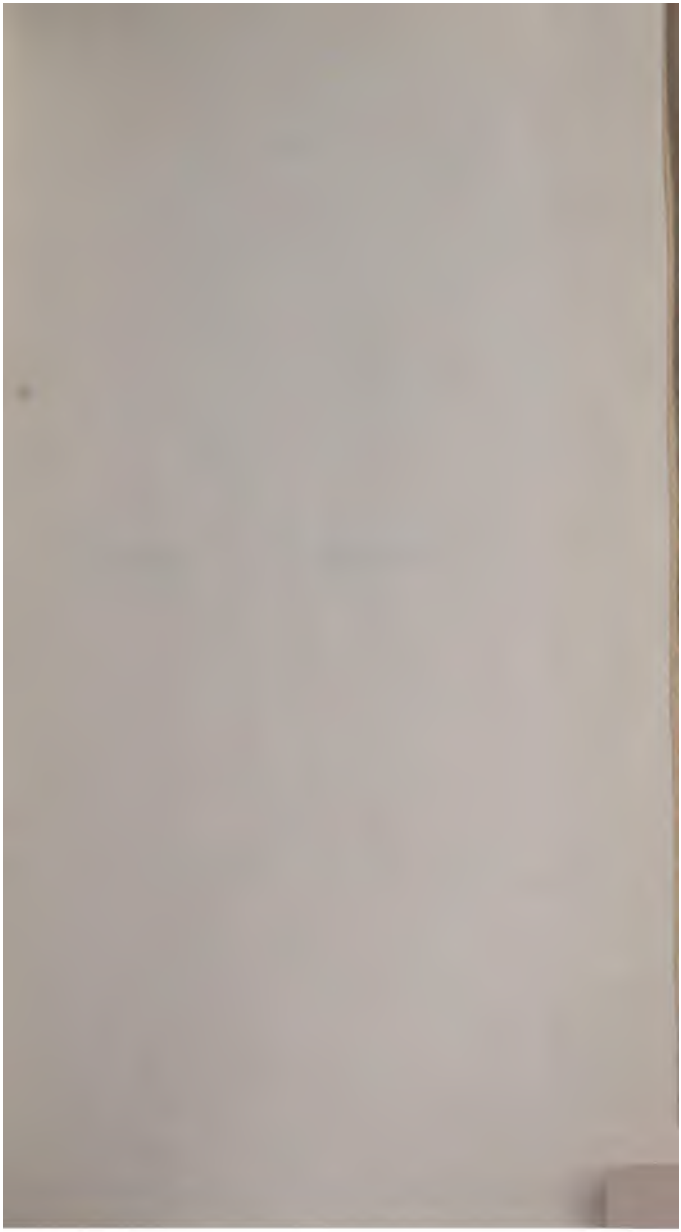


21423.29.6.4

GIFT OF

S. GEORGE PEABODY GARDNER

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY



TOMMY AND GRIZEL

THE WORKS OF J. M. BARRIE

POCKET EDITION, LIMP LEATHER

I. AULD LICHT IDYLLS, BETTER DEAD

II. WHEN A MAN'S SINGLE

III. A WINDOW IN THRUMS, AN EDINBURGH ELEVEN

IV. THE LITTLE MINISTER

V. SENTIMENTAL TOMMY

VI. MY LADY NICOTINE, MARGARET OGILVY

VII. TOMMY AND GRIZEL

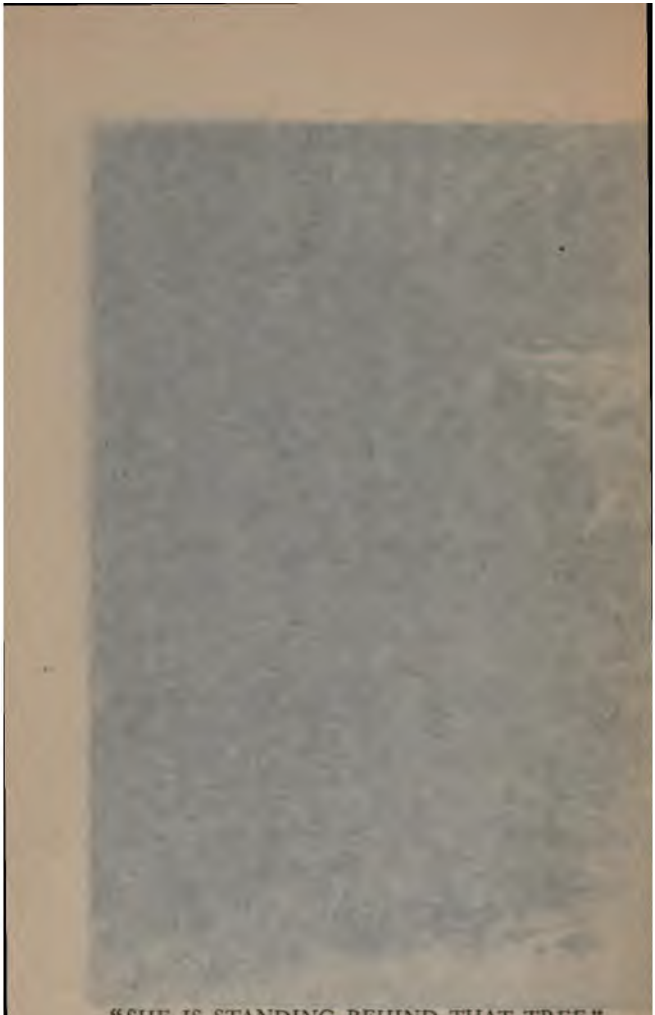
VIII. THE LITTLE WHITE BIRD

IX. PETER AND WENDY

X. HALF HOURS, DER TAG

The above 10 volumes in a box, $16.50 net
Sold separately, $1.65 net each vol.

CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS



"SHE IS STANDING BEHIND THAT TREE"
From a drawing by Bernard Partridge

OMMY AND GRIZEL

BY

J. M. BARRIE

NEW YORK
CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS
1917

21423.29.6.4

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY
GIFT OF
MRS. GEORGE PEABODY GARDNER
NOV. 15, 1939

AUTHOR'S EDITION

J. M. Barrie

Copyright, 1900, by CHARLES SCRIBNER'S SONS

24.84
105

CONTENTS

PART I

		PAGE
I	HOW TOMMY FOUND A WAY . .	3
II	THE SEARCH FOR THE TREASURE .	16
III	SANDYS ON WOMAN	36
IV	GRIZEL OF THE CROOKED SMILE .	52
V	THE TOMMY MYTH	69
VI	GHOSTS THAT HAUNT THE DEN .	87
VII	THE BEGINNING OF THE DUEL .	101
VIII	WHAT GRIZEL'S EYES SAID . . .	119
IX	GALLANT BEHAVIOUR OF T. SANDYS	132
X	GAVINIA ON THE TRACK	147
XI	THE TEA-PARTY	153
XII	IN WHICH A COMEDIAN CHALLENGES TRAGEDY TO BOWLS .	175
XIII	LITTLE WELLS OF GLADNESS . . .	194
XIV	ELSPETH	210
XV	BY PROSEN WATER	220
XVI	"HOW COULD YOU HURT YOUR GRIZEL SO!"	232
XVII	HOW TOMMY SAVED THE FLAG .	246

TOMMY AND GRIZEL

TOMMY AND GRIZEL

CHAPTER I

HOW TOMMY FOUND A WAY

O. P. PYM, the colossal Pym, that vast and rolling figure, who never knew what he was to write about until he dipped grandly, an author in such demand that on the foggy evening which starts our story his publishers have had his boots removed lest he slip thoughtlessly round the corner before his work is done, as was the great man's way — shall we begin with him, or with Tommy, who has just arrived in London, carrying his little box and leading a lady by the hand? It was Pym, as we are about to see, who in the beginning held Tommy up to the public gaze, Pym who first noticed his remarkable indifference to female society, Pym who gave him —— But alack! does no *one remember* Pym for himself? Is the *king of the Penny Number* already no more than

a button that once upon a time kept Tommy's person together? And we are at the night when they first met! Let us hasten into Marylebone before little Tommy arrives and Pym is swallowed like an oyster.

This is the house, 22 Little Owlet Street, Marylebone, but which were his rooms it is less easy to determine, for he was a lodger who flitted placidly from floor to floor according to the state of his finances, carrying his apparel and other belongings in one great armful, and spilling by the way. On this particular evening he was on the second floor front, which had a fireplace in the corner, furniture all his landlady's and mostly horsehair, little to suggest his calling save a noble saucerful of ink, and nothing to draw attention from Pym, who lolled, gross and massive, on a sofa, one leg over the back of it, the other drooping, his arms extended, and his pipe, which he could find nowhere, thrust between the buttons of his waistcoat, an agreeable pipe-rack. He wore a yellow dressing-gown, or could scarcely be said to wear it, for such of it as was not round his neck he had converted into a cushion for his head, which is perhaps the part of him we should have turned to first. It was a big round head, the plentiful gray hair in tangles, possibly because in Pym's last flitting the comb *had dropped* over the banisters; the features were *ugly and beyond* life-size, yet the forehead had al

d little except in colour since the day when he near being made a fellow of his college; there s sensitiveness left in the thick nose, humour in eyes, though they so often watered; the face d gone to flabbiness at last, but not without ne lines and dents, as if the head had resisted the dy for a space before the whole man rolled con-tedly downhill.

He had no beard. "Young man, let your beard ow." Those who have forgotten all else about ym may recall him in these words. They were his e counsel to literary aspirants, who, according as ey took it, are now bearded and prosperous or aven and on the rates. To shave costs three-ence, another threepence for loss of time — nearly en pounds a year, three hundred pounds since ym's chin first bristled. With his beard he could ave bought an annuity or a cottage in the coun-ry, he could have had a wife and children, and riven his dog-cart, and been made a church-war-den. All gone, all shaved, and for what? When e asked this question he would move his hand cross his chin with a sigh, and so, bravely to the barber's.

Pym was at present suffering from an ailment that had spread him out on that sofa again and again — acute disinclination to work.

Meanwhile all the world was waiting for his new tale: so the publishers, two little round men, have

told him. They have blustered, they have faw they have asked each other out to talk it behind the door.

Has he any idea of what the story is to be ab

He has no idea.

Then at least, Pym—excellent Pym—sit d and dip, and let us see what will happen.

He declined to do even that. While all world waited, this was Pym's ultimatum:

"I shall begin the damned thing at o'clock."

Outside, the fog kept changing at inte from black to white, as lazily from white to b (the monster blinking); there was not a s from the street save of pedestrians tapping their sticks on the pavement as they moved ward warily, afraid of an embrace with the known; it might have been a city of blind beg one of them a boy.

At eight o'clock Pym rose with a groan an down in his stocking-soles to write his deli tale. He was now alone. But though his were wound round his waste-paper basket, an dipped often and loudly in the saucer, like ringing at the door of Fancy, he could not ge idea that would set him going. He was still ping for inspiration when T. Sandys, who had told to find the second floor for himself, kno at the door, and entered, quaking.

"I remember it vividly," Pym used to say when estioned in the after years about this his first at of Tommy, "and I hesitate to decide which pressed me more, the richness of his voice, so narkable in a boy of sixteen, or his serene coun-ance, with its noble forehead, behind which thing base could lurk."

Pym, Pym! it is such as you that makes the iting of biography difficult. The richness of ommy's voice could not have struck you, for at at time it was a somewhat squeaky voice; and as r the noble forehead behind which nothing base uld lurk, how could you say that, Pym, you ho had a noble forehead yourself?

No; all that Pym saw was a pasty-faced boy xteen years old, and of an appearance myste-ously plain; hair light brown, and waving defi-nce to the brush; nothing startling about him but e expression of his face, which was almost fear-mely solemn and apparently unchangeable. He ore his Sunday blacks, of which the trousers ight with advantage have borrowed from the leeves; and he was so nervous that he had to wet is lips before he could speak. He had left the door ajar for a private reason; but Pym, misun-derstanding, thought he did it to fly the more eadily if anything was flung at him, and so con-cluded that he must be a printer's devil.

Pym had a *voice that* shook his mantelpiece

ornaments; he was all on the same scal
lnk-pot. "Your Christian name, boy?" h
hopefully, for it was thus he sometimes
idea that started him.

"Thomas," replied the boy.

Pym gave him a look of disgust. "Yo
go," he said. But when he looked up pre
Thomas was still there. He was not only
but whistling — a short, encouraging whistle
seemed to be directed at the door. He sto
quickly when Pym looked up, but during th
mainder of the interview he emitted this wh
at intervals, always with that anxious glance a
friend the door; and its strained joviality wa
odd contrast with his solemn face, like a ch
tune played on the church organ.

"Begone!" cried Pym.

"My full name," explained Tommy, who
speaking the English correctly, but with a S
accent, "is Thomas Sandys. And fine you k
who that is," he added, exasperated by Pym'
difference. "I'm the T. Sandys that answ
your advertisement."

Pym knew who he was now. "You y
ruffian," he gasped, "I never dreamt that
would come!"

"I have your letter engaging me in my poc
said Tommy, boldly, and he laid it on the t
Pym surveyed it and him in comic dismay,

th a sudden thought produced nearly a dozen tters from a drawer, and dumped them down side the other. It was now his turn to look umphant and Tommy aghast.

Pym's letters were all addressed from the Dubb Prosen Farm, near Thrums, N. B., to different dvertisers, care of a London agency, and were Tommy's answers to the "wants" in a London ewspaper which had found its way to the far North. "X Y Z" was in need of a chemist's ssistant, and from his earliest years, said one of he letters, chemistry had been the study of studies for T. Sandys. He was glad to read, was T. Sandys, that one who did not object to long hours would be preferred, for it seemed to him that those who objected to long hours did not really love their work, their heart was not in it, and only where the heart is can the treasure be found.

"123" had a vacancy for a page-boy, "Glasgow Man" for a photographer; page-boy must not be over fourteen, photographer must not be under twenty. "I am a little over fourteen, but I look less," wrote T. Sandys to "123"; "I am a little under twenty," he wrote to "Glasgow Man," "but I look more." His heart was in the work.

To be a political organizer! If "H and H," who advertised for one, only knew how eagerly the undersigned desired to devote his life to political organizing!

In answer to "Scholastic's" advertisement re janitor in a boys' school, T. Sandys begged t submit his name for consideration.

Undoubtedly the noblest letter was the one apply ing for the secretaryship of a charitable society salary to begin at once, but the candidate selecte must deposit one hundred pounds. The applica tion was noble in its offer to make the work labour of love, and almost nobler in its argumen that the hundred pounds was unnecessary.

"Rex" had a vacancy in his drapery departmen T. Sandys had made a unique study of drapery.

Lastly, "Anon" wanted an amanuensis. "Salary, said "Anon," who seemed to be a humourist, "sa ary large but uncertain." He added with equa candour: "Drudgery great, but to an intelligen man the pickings may be considerable." Pickings Is there a finer word in the language? T. Sandy had felt that he was particularly good at pickings But amanuensis? The thing was unknown t him; no one on the farm could tell him what i was. But never mind; his heart was in it.

All this correspondence had produced one reply the letter on which Tommy's hand still rested. I was a brief note, signed "O. P. Pym," and engaging Mr. Sandys on his own recommendation, "if h really felt quite certain that his heart (treasure in *cluded) was* in the work." So far good, Tomm *had thought* when he received this answer, b

here was nothing in it to indicate the nature of the work, nothing to show whether O. P. Pym was "Scholastic," or "123," or "Rex," or any other advertiser in particular. Stop, there was a postscript: "I need not go into details about your duties, as you assure me you are so well acquainted with them, but before you join me please send (in writing) a full statement of what you think they are."

There were delicate reasons why Mr. Sandys could not do that, but oh, he was anxious to be done with farm labour, so he decided to pack and risk it. The letter said plainly that he was engaged; what for he must find out slyly when he came to London. So he had put his letter firmly on Pym's table; but it was a staggerer to find that gentleman in possession of the others.

One of these was Pym's by right; the remainder were a humourous gift from the agent who was accustomed to sift the correspondence of his clients. Pym had chuckled over them, and written a reply that he flattered himself would stump the boy; then he had unexpectedly come into funds (he found a forgotten check while searching his old pockets for tobacco-crumbs), and in that glory T. Sandys escaped his memory. Result, that they were now face to face.

A tiny red spot, not noticeable before, now appeared in Tommy's eyes. It was never there

except when he was determined to have his w
Pym, my friend, yes, and everyone of you
is destined to challenge Tommy, 'ware that
light!

"Well, which am I?" demanded Pym, alm
amused, Tommy was so obviously in a strug
with the problem.

The saucer and the blank pages told nothi
"Whichever you are," the boy answered heavi
"it's not herding nor foddering cattle, and so lo
as it's not that, I'll put my heart in it, and wh
the heart is, there the treasure ——"

He suddenly remembered that his host must
acquainted with the sentiment.

Easy-going Pym laughed, then said irritabl
"Of what use could a mere boy be to me?"

"Then it's not the page-boy!" exclaime
Tommy, thankfully.

"Perhaps I am 'Scholastic,'" suggested Pym.

"No," said Tommy, after a long study of h
face.

Pym followed this reasoning, and said touchil
"Many a schoolmaster has a red face."

"Not that kind of redness," explained Tomm
without delicacy.

"I am 'H and H,'" said Pym.

"You forget you wrote to me as one persor
replied Tommy.

"*So I did.* That was because I am the chemis

nd I must ask you, Thomas, for your certifi-
ate."

Tommy believed him this time, and Pym triumhantly poured himself a glass of whisky, spilling ome of it on his dressing-gown.

"Not you," said Tommy, quickly; "a chemist as a steady hand."

"Confound you!" cried Pym, "what sort of a oy is this?"

"If you had been the draper you would have iped the drink off your gown," continued Tommy, houghtfully, "and if you had been 'Glasgow Man' you would have sucked it off, and if you ad been the charitable society you would n't wear in company." He flung out his hand. "I'll ell you who you are," he said sternly, "you're Anon.'"

Under this broadside Pym succumbed. He sat down feebly. "Right," he said, with a humourous groan, "and I shall tell you who you are. I am afraid you are my amanuensis!"

Tommy immediately whistled, a louder and more glorious note than before.

"Don't be so cocky," cried Pym, in sudden rebellion. "You are only my amanuensis if you can tell me what that is. If you can't — out you go!"

He had him at last!

Not he!

"An amanuensis," said Tommy, caln one who writes to dictation. Am I to brin box? It's at the door."

This made Pym sit down again. "Yo know what an amanuensis was when you a my advertisement," he said.

"As soon as I got to London," Tom swered, "I went into a bookseller's shop, pr I wanted to buy a dictionary, and I loo word up."

"Bring in your box," Pym said, with a

But it was now Tommy's turn to "Have you noticed," he asked awkwardl I sometimes whistle?"

"Don't tell me," said Pym, "that you dog out there."

"It's not a dog," Tommy replied cautio

Pym had resumed his seat at the table once more toying with his pen. "Open th he commanded, "and let me see what y brought with you."

Tommy obeyed gingerly, and then Pyn for what the open door revealed to him w roped box with a girl of twelve sitting on was dressed in some dull-coloured wincey, an cold and patient and lonely. And as she saw man staring at her she struggled in alarn feet, and could scarce stand on them. was looking apprehensively from her to P

"Good God, boy!" roared Pym, "are you married?"

"No," cried Tommy, in agony, "she's my sister, and we're orphans, and did you think I could have the heart to leave Elspeth behind?" He took her stoutly by the hand.

"And he never will marry," said little Elspeth, almost fiercely; "will you, Tommy?"

"Never!" said Tommy, patting her and glaring at Pym.

But Pym would not have it. "Married!" he shouted. "Magnificent!" And he dipped exultantly, for he had got his idea at last. Forgetting even that he had an amanuensis, he wrote on and on and on.

"He smells o' drink," Elspeth whispered.

"All the better," replied Tommy, cheerily. "Make yourself at home, Elspeth; he's the kind I can manage. Was there ever a kind I couldna manage?" he whispered, top-heavy with conceit.

"There was Grizel," Elspeth said, rather thoughtlessly; and then Tommy frowned.

CHAPTER II

THE SEARCH FOR THE TREASURE

Six years afterwards Tommy was a famous n as I hope you do not need to be told; but may be wondering how it came about. The wh question, in Pym's words, resolves itself into h the solemn little devil got to know so much ab women. It made the world marvel when t learned his age, but no one was quite so stagge as Pym, who had seen him daily for all th years, and been damning him for his indiffere to the sex during the greater part of them.

It began while he was still no more than amanuensis, sitting with his feet in the waste-pa basket, Pym dictating from the sofa, and swea when the words would not come unless he perpendicular. Among the duties of this ama ensis was to remember the name of the hero her appearance, and other personal details; for P constantly forgot them in the night, and he ha go searching back through his pages for th cursing her so horribly that Tommy signed to *speth to* retire to her tiny bedroom at the top of

ouse. He was always most careful of Elspeth, nd with the first pound he earned he insured his fe, leaving all to her, but told her nothing about , lest she should think it meant his early death. s she grew older he also got good dull books for er from a library, and gave her a piano on the hire ystem, and taught her many things about life, very arefully selected from his own discoveries.

Elspeth out of the way, he could give Pym all he information wanted. "Her name is Felicity," e would say at the right moment; "she has curly rown hair in which the sun strays, and a blushing eck, and her eyes are like blue lakes."

"Height!" roared Pym. "Have I mentioned it?"

"No; but she is about five feet six."

"How the —— could you know that?"

"You tell Percy's height in his stocking-soles, and when she reached to his mouth and kissed him she had to stand on her tiptoes so to do."

Tommy said this in a most businesslike tone, but could not help smacking his lips. He smacked them again when he had to write: "Have no fear, little woman; I am by your side." Or, "What a sweet child you are!"

Pym had probably fallen into the way of making the Percys revel in such epithets because he could not remember the girl's name; but this delicious use of the diminutive, as addressed to full-grown

ladies, went to Tommy's head. His solemn f
kept his secret, but he had some narrow escap
as once, when saying good-night to Elspeth, l
kissed her on mouth, eyes, nose, and ears, a
said: "Shall I tuck you in, little woman?" I
came to himself with a start.

"I forgot," he said hurriedly, and got out of t
room without telling her what he had forgotten.

Pym's publishers knew their man, and th
arrangement with him was that he was paid
completion of the tale. But always before
reached the middle he struck for what they cal
his honorarium; and this troubled them, for
tale was appearing week by week as it was writt
If they were obdurate, he suddenly concluded
story in such words as these:

"Several years have passed since these eve
took place, and the scene changes to a lovely g
den by the bank of old Father Thames. A yo
man sits by the soft-flowing stream, and he is c
as the scene itself; for the storm has passed aw
and Percy (for it is no other) has found an anch
age. As he sits musing over the past, Felic
steals out by the French window and puts her
arms around his neck. 'My little wife!'
murmurs. *The End — unless you pay up by n*
senger."

This last line, which was not meant for
world (but little would Pym have cared thoug

had been printed), usually brought his employers to their knees; and then, as Tommy advanced in experience, came the pickings — for Pym, with money in his pockets, had important engagements round the corner, and risked intrusting his amanuensis with the writing of the next instalment, "all except the bang at the end."

Smaller people, in Tommy's state of mind, would have hurried straight to the love-passages; but he saw the danger, and forced his Pegasus away from them. "Do your day's toil first," he may be conceived saying to that animal, "and at evenfall I shall let you out to browse." So, with this reward in front, he devoted many pages to the dreary adventures of pretentious males, and even found a certain pleasure in keeping the lady waiting. But as soon as he reached her he lost his head again.

"Oh, you beauty! oh, you small pet!" he said to himself, with solemn transport.

As the artist in him was stirred, great problems presented themselves; for instance, in certain circumstances was "darling" or "little one" the better phrase? "Darling" in solitary grandeur is more pregnant of meaning than "little one," but "little" has a flavour of the patronizing which "darling" perhaps lacks. He wasted many sheets over such questions; but they were in his pocket when Pym or Elspeth opened the door. It is wonderful how *much you can conceal* between the touch on the

handle and the opening of the door, if your he
is in it.

Despite this fine practice, however, he was t
shyest of mankind in the presence of women, a
this shyness grew upon him with the years. W
it because he never tried to uncork himself? O
no! It was about this time that he, one day, p
his arm round Clara, the servant—not passionatel
but with deliberation, as if he were making
experiment with machinery. He then listened,
if to hear Clara ticking. He wrote an admirab
love-letter — warm, dignified, sincere — to nobod
in particular, and carried it about in his pocket
readiness. But in love-making, as in the other art
those do it best who cannot tell how it is done
and he was always stricken with a palsy whe
about to present that letter. It seemed that h
was only able to speak to ladies when they wer
not there. Well, if he could not speak, he thought
the more; he thought so profoundly that in time
the heroines of Pym ceased to thrill him.

This was because he had found out that the
were not flesh and blood. But he did not delight i
his discovery: it horrified him; for what he wante
was the old thrill. To make them human so tha
they could be his little friends again — nothing les
was called for. This meant slaughter here and then
of the great Pym's brain-work, and Tommy trie
to keep his hands off; but his heart was in it. I

s pages the ladies were the most virtuous and
r of their sex (though dreadfully persecuted),
e merely told you so at the beginning, and
nd again afterwards to fill up, and then al-
them to act with what may be called rash-
so that the story did not really suffer. Before
ny was nineteen he changed all that. Out
this because she would not have done it, and
ecause she could not have done it. Fathers
now have taken a lesson from T. Sandys in
bringing of their daughters. He even sternly
out the diminutives. With a pen in his
and woman in his head, he had such noble
hts that his tears of exaltation damped the
as he wrote, and the ladies must have been
nded as well as proud to see what they were
ng into.

at was Tommy with a pen in his hand and a
kerchief hard by; but it was another Tommy
when the finest bursts were over, sat back in
hair and mused. The lady was consistent
and he would think about her, and think and
, until concentration, which is a pair of blaz-
yes, seemed to draw her out of the pages to
ide, and then he and she sported in a way
dden in the tale. While he sat there with
riveted, he had her to dinner at a restaurant,
took her up the river, and called her "little
an"; *and when she* held up her mouth he said

tantalizingly that she must wait until he had finished his cigar. This queer delight enjoyed, back he popped her into the story, where she was again the vehicle for such glorious sentiments that Elspeth, to whom he read the best of them, feared he was becoming too good to live.

In the meantime the great penny public were slowly growing restive, and at last the two little round men called on Pym to complain that he was falling off; and Pym turned them out of doors, and then sat down heroically to do what he had not done for two decades — to read his latest work.

"Elspeth, go upstairs to your room," whispered Tommy, and then he folded his arms proudly. He should have been in a tremble, but latterly he had often felt that he must burst if he did not soon read some of his bits to Pym, more especially the passages about the hereafter; also the opening of Chapter Seventeen.

At first Pym's only comment was, "It is the same old drivel as before; what more can they want?"

But presently he looked up, puzzled. "Is this chapter yours or mine?" he demanded.

"It is about half and half," said Tommy.

"Is mine the first half? Where does yours *begin*?"

"*That is not* exactly what I mean," explained

Tommy, in a glow, but backing a little; "you wrote that chapter first, and then I — I ——"

"You rewrote it!" roared Pym. "You dared to meddle with ——" He was speechless with fury.

"I tried to keep my hand off," Tommy said, with dignity, "but the thing had to be done, and they are human now."

"Human! who wants them to be human? The fiends seize you, boy! you have even been tinkering with my heroine's personal appearance; what is this you have been doing to her nose?"

"I turned it up slightly, that's all," said Tommy.

"I like them down," roared Pym.

"I prefer them up," said Tommy, stiffly.

"Where," cried Pym, turning over the leaves in a panic, "where is the scene in the burning house?"

"It's out," Tommy explained, "but there is a chapter in its place about — it's mostly about the beauty of the soul being everything, and mere physical beauty nothing. Oh, Mr. Pym, sit down and let me read it to you."

But Pym read it, and a great deal more, for himself. No wonder he stormed, for the impossible had been made not only consistent, but unreadable. The plot was lost for chapters. The characters no longer *did* anything, and then went *and did something else*: you were told instead

how they did it. You were not allowed to m
up your own mind about them: you had to li
to the mind of T. Sandys; he described and he a
lyzed; the road he had tried to clear through
thicket was impassable for chips.

"A few more weeks of this," said Pym, "
we should all three be turned out into the street

Tommy went to bed in an agony of mortifi
tion, but presently to his side came Pym.

"Where did you copy this from?" he ask
"'It is when we are thinking of those we love th
our noblest thoughts come to us, and the mo
worthy they are of our love the nobler the thoughts
hence it is that no one has done the greatest wo
who did not love God.'"

"I copied it from nowhere," replied Tommy
fiercely; "it's my own."

"Well, it has nothing to do with the story, an
so is only a blot on it, and I have no doubt th
thing has been said much better before. Still, I
suppose it is true."

"It's true," said Tommy; "and yet——"

"Go on. I want to know all about it."

"And yet," Tommy said, puzzled, "I've known
noble thoughts come to me when I was listening
to a brass band."

Pym chuckled. "Funny things, noble thoughts,"
he agreed. He read another passage:

"'It was the last half-hour of day when I wa

admitted, with several others, to look upon my friend's dead face. A handkerchief had been laid over it. I raised the handkerchief. I know not what the others were thinking, but the last time we met he had told me something, it was not much — only that no woman had ever kissed him. It seemed to me that, as I gazed, the wistfulness came back to his face. I whispered to a woman who was present, and stooping over him, she was about to — but her eyes were dry, and I stopped her. The handkerchief was replaced, and all left the room save myself. Again I raised the handkerchief. I cannot tell you how innocent he looked.'"

"Who was he?" asked Pym.

"Nobody," said Tommy, with some awe; "it just came to me. Do you notice how simple the wording is? It took me some time to make it so simple."

"You are just nineteen, I think?"

"Yes."

Pym looked at him wonderingly.

"Thomas," he said, "you are a very queer little devil."

He also said: "And it is possible you may find the treasure you are always talking about. Don't jump to the ceiling, my friend, because I say that. I was once *after the* treasure, myself; and you can *see whether I found* it."

From about that time, on the chances that t mysterious treasure might spring up in the fo of a new kind of flower, Pym zealously cultiva the ground, and Tommy had an industrious ti of it. He was taken off his stories, which at o regained their elasticity, and put on to exercises

"If you have nothing to say on the subject, nothing," was one of the new rules, which would have expected from Pym. Another w "As soon as you can say what you think, and what some other person has thought for you, are on the way to being a remarkable man."

"Without concentration, Thomas, you are l concentrate, though your coat-tails be on fire.

"Try your hand at description, and when have done chortling over the result, reduce whole by half without missing anything out.

"Analyze your characters and their motive the prodigious length in which you revel, and th my sonny, cut your analysis out. It is for y own guidance, not the reader's.

"'I have often noticed,' you are always say The story has nothing to do with you. Oblite yourself. I see that will be your stiffest job.

"Stop preaching. It seems to me the pulp where you should look for the treasure. Ninet and you are already as didactic as seventy."

And so on.

Over his exercises Tommy was now engro

or so long a period that, as he sits there, you may observe his legs slowly lengthening and the coming of his beard. No, his legs lengthened as he sat with his feet in the basket; but I feel sure that his beard burst through prematurely some night when he was thinking too hard about the ladies.

There were no ladies in the exercises, for, despite their altercation about noses, Pym knew that on this subject Tommy's mind was a blank. But he recognized the sex's importance, and becoming possessed once more of a black coat, marched his pupil into the somewhat shoddy drawing-rooms that were still open to him, and there ordered Tommy to be fascinated for his future good. But it was as it had always been. Tommy sat white and speechless and apparently bored; could not even say, "You sing with so much expression!" when the lady at the pianoforte had finished.

"Shyness I could pardon," the exasperated Pym would roar; "but want of interest is almost immoral. At your age the blood would have been coursing through my veins. Love! You are incapable of it. There is not a drop of sentiment in your frozen carcass."

"Can I help that?" growled Tommy. It was an agony to him even to speak about women.

"If you can't," said Pym, "all is over with you. An artist without sentiment is a painter without colours. Young man, I fear you are doomed."

And Tommy believed him, and quaked. He had the most gallant struggles with himself. He even set his teeth and joined a dancing-class; though neither Pym nor Elspeth knew of it, and it never showed afterwards in his legs. In appearance he was now beginning to be the Sandys of the photographs: a little over the middle height and rather heavily built; nothing to make you uncomfortable until you saw his face. That solemn countenance never responded when he laughed, and stood coldly by when he was on fire; he might have winked for an eternity, and still the onlooker must have thought himself mistaken. In his boyhood the mask had descended scarce below his mouth, for there was a dimple in the chin to put you at ease; but now the short brown beard had come, and he was for ever hidden from the world.

He had the dandy's tastes for superb neckties, velvet jackets, and he got the ties instead of dining; he panted for the jacket, knew all the shop-windows it was in, but for years denied himself, with a moan, so that he might buy pretty things for Elspeth. When eventually he got it, Pym's friends ridiculed him. When he saw how ill his face matched it he ridiculed himself. Often when Tommy was feeling that now at last the ladies must come to heel, he saw his face suddenly in a *mirror,* and all the spirit went out of him. But *still he clung* to his velvet jacket.

I see him in it, stalking through the terrible dances, a heroic figure at last. He shuddered every time he found himself on one leg; he got sternly into everybody's way; he was the butt of the little noodle of an instructor. All the social tortures he endured grimly, in the hope that at last the cork would come out. Then, though there were all kinds of girls in the class, merry, sentimental, practical, coquettish, prudes, there was no kind, he felt, whose heart he could not touch. In love-making, as in the favourite Thrums game of the dambrod, there are sixty-one openings, and he knew them all. Yet at the last dance, as at the first, the universal opinion of his partners (shop-girls, mostly, from the large millinery establishments, who had to fly like Cinderellas when the clock struck a certain hour) was that he kept himself to himself, and they were too much the lady to make up to a gentleman who so obviously did not want them.

Pym encouraged his friends to jeer at Tommy's want of interest in the sex, thinking it a way of goading him to action. One evening, the bottles circulating, they mentioned one Dolly, goddess at some bar, as a fit instructress for him. Coarse pleasantries passed, but for a time he writhed in silence, then burst upon them indignantly for their unmanly smirching of a woman's character, and swept out, leaving *them* a little ashamed. That *was very like Tommy.*

But presently a desire came over him to this girl, and it came because they had hinted dark things about her. That was like him al

There was probably no harm in Dolly, tho it is man's proud right to question it in excha for his bitters. She was tall and willowy, stretched her neck like a swan, and returned your change with disdainful languor; to call s a haughty beauty Dolly was one of the minor umphs for man, and Dolly they all called her, cept the only one who could have given an arti justification for it.

This one was a bearded stranger who, when knew that Pym and his friends were elsewhe would enter the bar with a cigar in his mouth, a ask for a whisky-and-water, which was heroi again, for smoking was ever detestable to him, a whisky more offensive than quinine. But the things are expected of you, and by asking for t whisky you get into talk with Dolly; that is say, you tell her several times what you want, a when she has served every other body you get The commercial must be served first; in the ba room he blocks the way like royalty in the stree There is a crown for us all somewhere.

Dolly seldom heard the bearded one's "goo evening"; she could not possibly have heard th "dear," for though it was there, it remained b hind his teeth. She knew him only as the sti

an who got separated from his glass without complaining, and at first she put this down to forgetfulness, and did nothing, so that he could go away without drinking; but by and by, wherever he left his tumbler, cunningly concealed behind a water-bottle, or temptingly in front of a commercial, she restored it to him, and there was a twinkle in her eye.

"You little rogue, so you see through me!" Surely it was an easy thing to say; but what he did say was "Thank you." Then to himself he said, "Ass, ass, ass!"

Sitting on the padded seat that ran the length of the room, and surreptitiously breaking his cigar against the cushions to help it on its way to an end, he brought his intellect to bear on Dolly at a distance, and soon had a better knowledge of her than could be claimed by those who had Dollied her for years. He also wove romances about her, some of them of too lively a character, and others so noble and sad and beautiful that the tears came to his eyes, and Dolly thought he had been drinking. He could not have said whether he would prefer her to be good or bad.

These were but his leisure moments, for during the long working hours he was still at the exercises, toiling fondly, and right willing to tear himself asunder to get at the trick of writing. So he passed from exercises to the grand experiment,

It was to be a tale, for there, they had taken for granted, lay the treasure. Pym was most considerate at this time, and mentioned woman with an apology.

"I have kept away from them in the exercises," he said in effect, "because it would have been useless (as well as cruel) to force you to labour on a subject so uncongenial to you; and for the same reason I have decided that it is to be a tale of adventure, in which the heroine need be little more than a beautiful sack of coals which your cavalier carries about with him on his left shoulder. I am afraid we must have her to that extent, Thomas, but I am not asking much of you; dump her down as often as you like."

And Thomas did his dogged best, the red light in his eye; though he had not, and never could have had, the smallest instinct for story-writing, he knew to the finger-tips how it is done; but for ever he would have gone on breaking all the rules of the game. How he wrestled with himself! Sublime thoughts came to him (nearly all about that girl), and he drove them away, for he knew they beat only against the march of his story, and, whatever befall, the story must march. Relentlessly he followed in the track of his men, pushing the dreary dogs on to deeds of valour. He *tried making* the lady human, and then she would *not march; she* sat still, and he talked about her;

lumped her down, and soon he was yawning. s weariness was what alarmed him most, for l he understood that there could be no treasure re the work was not engrossing play, and he bted no more than Pym that for him the sure was in the tale or nowhere. Had he not n sharpening his tools in this belief for years? nge to reflect now that all the time he was king and sweating at that novel (the last he r attempted) it was only marching towards the ste-paper basket!

He had a fine capacity, as has been hinted, for f-deception, and in time, of course, he found way of dodging the disquieting truth. This, ally of course, was by yielding to his impulses. allowed himself an hour a day, when Pym was ent, in which he wrote the story as it seemed want to write itself, and then he cut this piece , which could be done quite easily, as it con- ed only of moralizings. Thus was his day ghtened, and with this relaxation to look for- rd to he plodded on at his proper work, delv- so hard that he could avoid asking himself y he was still delving. What shall we say? was digging for the treasure in an orchard, and ry now and again he came out of his hole to ck an apple; but though the apple was so sweet the mouth, it never struck him that the treasure ght be growing overhead. At first he destroyed

the fruit of his stolen hour, and even after he t
to carrying it about fondly in his pocket, and
rewriting it in a splendid new form that had c
to him just as he was stepping into bed, he c
tinued to conceal it from his overseer's eyes. A
still he thought all was over with him when Py
said the story did not march.

"It is a dead thing," Pym would roar, flingi
down the manuscript,—"a dead thing because t
stakes your man is playing for, a woman's love,
less than a wooden counter to you. You are
fine piece of mechanism, my solemn-faced do
but you are a watch that won't go because you a
not wound up. Nobody can wind the artist u
except a chit of a girl; and how you are ever t
get one to take pity on you, only the gods wh
look after men with a want can tell.

"It becomes more impenetrable every day,"
he said. "No use your sitting there tearing your-
self to bits. Out into the street with you! I sus-
pend these sittings until you can tell me you have
kissed a girl."

He was still saying this sort of thing when the
famous "Letters" were published — T. Sandys,
author. "Letters to a Young Man About to be
Married" was the full title, and another almost as
applicable would have been "Bits Cut Out of a
Story because They Prevented its Marching." If
you have any memory you do not need to be told

how that splendid study, so ennobling, so penetrating, of woman at her best, took the town. Tommy woke a famous man, and, except Elspeth, no one was more pleased than big-hearted, hopeless, bleary Pym.

"But how the —— has it all come about!" he kept roaring.

"A woman can be anything that the man who loves her would have her be," says the "Letters"; and "Oh," said woman everywhere, "if all men had the same idea of us as Mr. Sandys!"

"To meet Mr. T. Sandys." Leaders of society wrote it on their invitation cards. Their daughters, athirst for a new sensation, thrilled at the thought, "Will he talk to us as nobly as he writes?" And oh, how willing he was to do it, especially if their noses were slightly tilted!

CHAPTER III

SANDYS ON WOMAN

"CAN you kindly tell me the name of the b
I want?"

It is the commonest question asked at the
culating library by dainty ladies just out of
carriage; and the librarian, after looking them c
can usually tell. In the days we have no
speak of, however, he answered, without lool
them over:

"Sandys's 'Letters.'"

"Ah, yes, of course. May I have it, pleas

"I regret to find that it is out."

Then the lady looked naughty. "Why d
you have two copies?" she pouted.

"Madam," said the librarian, "we have a tl
sand."

A small and very timid girl of eighteen, wi
neat figure that shrank from observation, altho
it was already aware that it looked best in g
was there to drink in this music, and carrie
home in her heart. She was Elspeth, and
dear heart was almost too full at this time. I l

tate whether to tell or to conceal how it even created a disturbance in no less a place than the House of Commons. She was there with Mrs. Jerry, and the thing was recorded in the papers of the period in these blasting words: "The Home Secretary was understood to be quoting a passage from 'Letters to a Young Man,' but we failed to catch its drift, owing to an unseemly interruption from the ladies' gallery."

"But what was it you cried out?" Tommy asked Elspeth, when she thought she had told him everything. (Like all true women, she always began in the middle.)

"Oh, Tommy, have I not told you? I cried out, 'I'm his sister.'"

Thus, owing to Elspeth's behaviour, it can never be known which was the passage quoted in the House; but we may be sure of one thing — that it did the House good. That book did everybody good. Even Pym could only throw off its beneficent effects by a tremendous effort, and young men about to be married used to ask at the bookshops, not for the "Letters," but simply for "Sandys on Woman," acknowledging Tommy as the authority on the subject, like Mill on Jurisprudence, or Thomson and Tait on the Differential Calculus. Controversies raged about it. Some thought he asked too much of man, some thought he saw too much in women; there was a fear that young peo-

ple, knowing at last how far short they fell of w
they ought to be, might shrink from the matrim
that must expose them to each other, now that t
had Sandys to guide them, and the persons who
simply married and risked it (and it was astoundi
what a number of them there proved to be) wr
to the papers suggesting that he might yield a li
in the next edition. But Sandys remained firm.

At first they took for granted that he was a ve
aged gentleman; he had, indeed, hinted at th
in the text; and when the truth came out ("A
just fancy, he is not even married!") the enthu
siasm was doubled. "Not engaged!" they crie
"Don't tell that to me. No unmarried man coul
have written such a eulogy of marriage witho
being on the brink of it." Perhaps she was dead!
It ran through the town that she was dead. Som
knew which cemetery.

The very first lady Mr. Sandys ever took in t
dinner mentioned this rumour to him, not wit
vulgar curiosity, but delicately, with a hint of sym
pathy in waiting, and it must be remembered, i
fairness to Tommy, that all artists love sympathy
This sympathy uncorked him, and our Tomm
could flow comparatively freely at last. Observ
the delicious change.

"Has that story got abroad?" he said simply
"The matter is one which, I need not say, I hav
never mentioned to a soul."

"Of course not," the lady said, and waited igerly.

If Tommy had been an expert he might have rned the conversation to brighter topics, but he as not; there had already been long pauses, and dinner talk it is perhaps allowable to fling on ny faggot rather than let the fire go out. "It is id that I should be talking of it now," he said usingly.

"I suppose," she said gently, to bring him out f the reverie into which he had sunk, "I suppose t happened some time ago?"

"Long, long ago," he answered. (Having written as an aged person, he often found difficulty in remembering suddenly that he was two and twenty.)

"But you are still a very young man."

"It seems long ago to me," he said with a sigh.

"Was she beautiful?"

"She was beautiful to my eyes."

"And as good, I am sure, as she was beautiful."

"Ah me!" said Tommy.

His confidante was burning to know more, and hoping they were being observed across the table; but she was a kind, sentimental creature, though stout, or because of it, and she said, "I am so afraid that my questions pain you."

"No, no," said Tommy, who was very, very happy.

"Was it very sudden?"

"Fever."

"Ah! but I meant your attachment."

"We met and we loved," he said with ge dignity.

"That is the true way," said the lady.

"It is the only way," he said decisively.

"Mr. Sandys, you have been so good, I wo if you would tell me her name?"

"Felicity," he said, with emotion. Prese he looked up. "It is very strange to me," he wonderingly, "to find myself saying these thing you who an hour ago were a complete strange me. But you are not like other women."

"No, indeed!" said the lady, warmly.

"That," he said, "must be why I tell you w I have never told to another human being. H mysterious are the workings of the heart!"

"Mr. Sandys," said the lady, quite carried av "no words of mine can convey to you the p with which I hear you say that. Be assured th shall respect your confidences." She missed next remark because she was wondering whe she dare ask him to come to dinner on the twe fifth, and then the ladies had to retire, and by time he rejoined her he was as tongue-tied a the beginning. The cork had not been tracted; it had been knocked into the bo where it still often barred the way, and there

always, as we shall see, a flavour of it in the wine.

"You will get over it yet; the summer and the flowers will come to you again," she managed to whisper to him kind-heartedly, as she was going.

"Thank you," he said, with that inscrutable face. It was far from his design to play a part. He had, indeed, had no design at all, but an opportunity for sentiment having presented itself, his mouth had opened as at a cherry. He did not laugh afterwards, even when he reflected how unexpectedly Felicity had come into his life; he thought of her rather with affectionate regard, and pictured her as a tall, slim girl in white. When he took a tall, slim girl in white in to dinner, he could not help saying huskily:

"You remind me of one who was a very dear friend of mine. I was much startled when you came into the room."

"You mean some one who is dead?" she asked in awe-struck tones.

"Fever," he said.

"You think I am like her in appearance?"

"In every way," he said dreamily; "the same sweet — pardon me, but it is very remarkable. Even the tones of the voice are the same. I suppose I ought not to ask your age?"

"I shall be twenty-one in August."

"*She would have* been twenty-one in August

had she lived," Tommy said with fervour. "My dear young lady ——"

This was the aged gentleman again, but she did not wince; he soon found out that they expect authors to say the oddest things, and this proved to be a great help to him.

"My dear young lady, I feel that I know you very well."

"That," she said, "is only because I resemble your friend outwardly. The real me (she was a bit of philosopher also) you cannot know at all."

He smiled sadly. "Has it ever struck you," he asked, "that you are very unlike other women?"

"Oh, how ever could you have found that out?" she exclaimed, amazed.

Almost before he knew how it came about, he was on terms of very pleasant sentiment with this girl, for they now shared between them a secret that he had confided to no other. His face, which had been so much against him hitherto, was at last in his favour; it showed so plainly that when he looked at her more softly or held her hand longer than is customary, he was really thinking of that other of whom she was the image. Or if it did not precisely show that, it suggested something or other of that nature which did just as well. *There was* a sweet something between them which *brought them* together and also kept them apart;

t allowed them to go a certain length, while it was also a reason why they could never, never exceed that distance; and this was an ideal state for Tommy, who could be most loyal and tender so long as it was understood that he meant nothing in particular. She was the right kind of girl, too, and admired him the more (and perhaps went a step further) because he remained so true to Felicity's memory.

You must not think him calculating and cold-blooded, for nothing could be less true to the fact. When not engaged, indeed, on his new work, he might waste some time planning scenes with exquisite ladies, in which he sparkled or had a hidden sorrow (he cared not which); but these scenes seldom came to life. He preferred very pretty girls to be rather stupid (oh, the artistic instinct of the man!), but instead of keeping them stupid, as he wanted to do, he found himself trying to improve their minds. They screwed up their noses in the effort. Meaning to thrill the celebrated beauty who had been specially invited to meet him, he devoted himself to a plain woman for whose plainness a sudden pity had mastered him (for, like all true worshippers of beauty in women, he always showed best in the presence of plain ones). With the intention of being a gallant knight to Lady I-Won't-Tell-the-Name, a whim *of the moment made* him so stiff to her that

she ultimately asked the reason; and such a ch
ingly sad reason presented itself to him tha
immediately invited him to her riverside part
Thursday week. He had the conversations
incidents for that party ready long before the
arrived; he altered them and polished them
other young gentlemen in the same circumsta
overhaul their boating costumes; but when
joined the party there was among them the
dren's governess, and seeing her slighted, his bl
boiled, and he was her attendant for the aftern

Elspeth was not at this pleasant jink in high
She had been invited, but her ladyship had o
let Tommy kiss her hand for the first and
time, so he decided sternly that this was no pl
for Elspeth. When temptation was nigh, he
locked Elspeth up, and then walked into it.

With two in every three women he was still
shy as ever, but the third he escorted triumphan
to the conservatory. She did no harm to his w
—rather sent him back to it refreshed. It was as
he were shooting the sentiment which other you
men get rid of more gradually by beginning earli
and there were such accumulations of it that
don't know whether he ever made up on the
Punishment sought him in the night, when
dreamed constantly that he was married—to who
scarcely mattered; he saw himself coming out
a church a married man, and the fright woke hi

up. But with the daylight came again his talent for dodging thoughts that were lying in wait, and he yielded as recklessly as before to every sentimental impulse. As illustration, take his humourous passage with Mrs. Jerry. Geraldine Something was her name, but her friends called her Mrs. Jerry.

She was a wealthy widow, buxom, not a day over thirty when she was merry, which might be at inappropriate moments, as immediately after she had expressed a desire to lead the higher life. "But I have a theory, my dear," she said solemnly to Elspeth, "that no woman is able to do it who cannot see her own nose without the help of a mirror." She had taken a great fancy to Elspeth, and made many engagements with her, and kept some of them, and the understanding was that she apprenticed herself to Tommy through Elspeth, he being too terrible to face by himself, or, as Mrs. Jerry expressed it, "all nose." So Tommy had seen very little of her, and thought less, until one day he called by passionate request to sign her birthday-book, and heard himself proposing to her instead!

For one thing, it was twilight, and she had forgotten to ring for the lamps. That might have been enough, but there was more: she read to him part of a letter in which her hand was solicited in marriage. "*And, for the life* of me," said Mrs. Jerry,

almost in tears, "I cannot decide whether to yes or no."

This put Tommy in a most awkward posi There are probably men who could have got of it without proposing; but to him there see at the moment no other way open. The l complicated matters also by beginning " Jerry," and saying "little Jerry" further on – pressions which stirred him strangely.

"Why do you read this to me?" he aske a voice that broke a little.

"Because you are so wise," she said. "Dc mind?"

"Do I mind!" he exclaimed bitterly. ("' care, you idiot!" he said to himself.)

"I was asking your advice only. Is it much?"

"Not at all. I am quite the right man to sult at such a moment, am I not?"

It was said with profound meaning; but his was as usual.

"That is what I thought," she said, in all faith.

"You do not even understand!" he cried, he was also looking longingly at his hat.

"Understand what?"

"Jerry," he said, and tried to stop himself, the result that he added, "dear little Jer ("What am I doing!" he groaned.)

he understood now. "You don't mean—" began, in amazement.

Yes," he cried passionately. "I love you. l you be my wife?" ("I am lost!")

Gracious!" exclaimed Mrs. Jerry; and then, reflection, she became indignant. "I would have believed it of you," she said scornfully. it my money, or what? I am not at all clever, ou must tell me."

With Tommy, of course, it was not her money. ept when he had Elspeth to consider, he was uch a Quixote about money as Pym himself; at no moment of his life was he a snob.

I am sorry you should think so meanly of " he said with dignity, lifting his hat; and he ld have got away then (which, when you come ink of it, was what he wanted) had he been able sist an impulse to heave a broken-hearted sigh e door.

Don't go yet, Mr. Sandys," she begged. "I have been hasty. And yet—why, we are ly acquaintances!"

le had meant to be very careful now, but that d sent him off again. "Acquaintances!" he d. "No, we were never that."

It almost seemed to me that you avoided me."

You noticed it!" he said eagerly. "At least, do me that justice. Oh, how I tried to avoid !"

"It was because —"

"Alas!"

She was touched, of course, but still puz
"We know so little of each other," she said.

"I see," he replied, "that you know me
little, Mrs. Jerry; but you — oh, Jerry, Jerry!
know you as no other man has ever known yo

"I wish I had proof of it," she said helpless

Proof! She should not have asked Tommy
proof. "I know," he cried, "how unlike all o
women you are. To the world you are like
rest, but in your heart you know that you
different; you know it, and I know it, and no ot
person knows it."

Yes, Mrs. Jerry knew it, and had often m
velled over it in the seclusion of her boudoir; b
that another should have found it out was stran
and almost terrifying.

"I know you love me now," she said soft
"Only love could have shown you that. But — o
let me go away for a minute to think!" And s
ran out of the room.

Other suitors have been left for a space
Tommy's state of doubt, but never, it may
hoped, with the same emotions. Oh, heavens!
she should accept him! He saw Elspeth sickeni
and dying of the news.

His guardian angel, however, was very good
Tommy at this time; or perhaps, like cannib

their prisoner, the god of sentiment (who has
il) was fattening him for a future feast; and
. Jerry's answer was that it could never be.
ommy bowed his head.
ut she hoped he would let her be his very dear
d. It would be the proudest recollection of
life that Mr. Sandys had entertained such feel-
for her.
othing could have been better, and he should
found difficulty in concealing his delight; but
strange Tommy was really feeling his part
n. It was an unforced tear that came to his
. Quite naturally he looked long and wistfully
er.
Jerry, Jerry!" he articulated huskily, and
tever the words mean in these circumstances
ally meant; then he put his lips to her hand
he first and last time, and so was gone, broken
brave. He was in splendid fettle for writing
evening. Wild animals sleep after gorging,
it sent this monster, refreshed, to his work.
evertheless, the incident gave him some uneasy
ctions. Was he, indeed, a monster? was one
he could dodge, as yet; but suppose Mrs.
y told his dear Elspeth of what had happened?
had said that she would not, but a secret in
. Jerry's breast was like her pug in her arms,
ys kicking to get free.
Elspeth," said Tommy, "what do you say

to going north and having a sight of Thrums again?"

He knew what she would say. They had been talking for years of going back; it was the great day that all her correspondence with old friends in Thrums looked forward to.

"They made little of you, Tommy," she said, "when we left; but I 'm thinking they will all be at their windows when you go back."

"Oh," replied Thomas, "that's nothing. But I should like to shake Corp by the hand again."

"And Aaron," said Elspeth. She was knitting stockings for Aaron at that moment.

"And Gavinia," Tommy said, "and the Dominie."

"And Ailie."

And then came an awkward pause, for they were both thinking of that independent girl called Grizel. She was seldom discussed. Tommy was oddly shy about mentioning her name; he would have preferred Elspeth to mention it: and Elspeth had misgivings that this was so, with the result that neither could say "Grizel" without wondering what was in the other's mind. Tommy had written twice to Grizel, the first time unknown to Elspeth, but that was in the days when the ladies of the penny numbers were disturbing him, and, *against his better* judgment (for well he knew she *would never* stand it), he had begun his letter

with these mad words: "Dear Little Woman." She did not answer this, but soon afterwards she wrote to Elspeth, and he was not mentioned in the letter proper, but it carried a sting in its tail. "P. S.," it said. "How is Sentimental Tommy?"

None but a fiend in human shape could have written thus, and Elspeth put her protecting arms round her brother. "Now we know what Grizel is," she said. "I am done with her now."

But when Tommy had got back his wind he said nobly: "I'll call her no names. If this is how she likes to repay me for — for all my kindnesses, let her. But, Elspeth, if I have the chance, I shall go on being good to her just the same."

Elspeth adored him for it, but Grizel would have stamped had she known. He had that comfort.

The second letter he never posted. It was written a few months before he became a celebrity, and had very fine things indeed in it, for old Dr. McQueen, Grizel's dear friend, had just died at his post, and it was a letter of condolence. While Tommy wrote it he was in a quiver of genuine emotion, as he was very pleased to feel, and it had a specially satisfying bit about death, and the world never being the same again. He knew it was good, but he did not send it to her, for no reason I can discover save that postscripts *jarred on him.*

CHAPTER IV

GRIZEL OF THE CROOKED SMILE

To expose Tommy for what he was, to appear to be scrupulously fair to him so that I might really damage him the more, that is what I set out to do in this book, and always when he seemed to be finding a way of getting round me (as I had a secret dread he might do) I was to remember Grizel and be obdurate. But if I have so far got past some of his virtues without even mentioning them (and I have), I know how many opportunities for discrediting him have been missed, and that would not greatly matter, there are so many more to come, if Grizel were on my side. But she is not; throughout those first chapters a voice has been crying to me, "Take care; if you hurt him you will hurt me"; and I know it to be the voice of Grizel, and I seem to see her, rocking her arms as she used to rock them when excited in the days of her innocent childhood. "Don't, don't, don't!" she cried at every cruel *word I gave him*, and she, to whom it was ever *such agony to* weep, dropped a tear upon each

word, so that they were obliterated; and "Surely I knew him best," she said, "and I always loved him"; and she stood there defending him, with her hand on her heart to conceal the gaping wound that Tommy had made.

Well, if Grizel had always loved him there was surely something fine and rare about Tommy. But what was it, Grizel? Why did you always love him, you who saw into him so well and demanded so much of men? When I ask that question the spirit that hovers round my desk to protect Tommy from me rocks her arms mournfully, as if she did not know the answer; it is only when I seem to see her as she so often was in life, before she got that wound and after, bending over some little child and looking up radiant, that I think I suddenly know why she always loved Tommy. It was because he had such need of her.

I don't know whether you remember, but there were once some children who played at Jacobites in the Thrums Den under Tommy's leadership. Elspeth, of course, was one of them, and there were Corp Shiach, and Gavinia, and lastly, there was Grizel. Had Tommy's parents been alive she would not have been allowed to join, for she was a painted lady's child; but Tommy insisted on having her, and Grizel thought it was just sweet of him. He also chatted with her in public places, *as if she were* a respectable character; and

oh, how she longed to be respectable! but, on
other hand, he was the first to point out
superbly he was behaving, and his ways
masterful, so the independent girl would not
captain's wife; if he said she was captain's
he had to apologize, and if he merely looked it
had to apologize just the same.

One night the Painted Lady died in the Den, a
then it would have gone hard with the lonely g
had not Dr. McQueen made her his little hou
keeper, not out of pity, he vowed (she was so anxio
to be told that), but because he was an old bac
elor sorely in need of someone to take care o
him. And how she took care of him! B
though she was so happy now, she knew that sh
must be very careful, for there was something i
her blood that might waken and prevent her bein
a good woman. She thought it would be sweet t
be good.

She told all this to Tommy, and he was pro
foundly interested, and consulted a wise man
whose advice was that when she grew up sh
should be wary of any man whom she liked an
mistrusted in one breath. Meaning to do her
service, Tommy communicated this to her; an
then, what do you think? Grizel would have n
more dealings with him! By and by the gods, i
a sportive mood, sent him to labour on a farm
whence, as we have seen, he found a way to Lor

don, and while he was growing into a man Grizel became a woman. At the time of the doctor's death she was nineteen, tall and graceful, and very dark and pale. When the winds of the day flushed her cheek she was beautiful; but it was a beauty that hid the mystery of her face. The sun made her merry, but she looked more noble when it had set; then her pallor shone with a soft, radiant light, as though the mystery and sadness and serenity of the moon were in it. The full beauty of Grizel came out only at night, like the stars.

I had made up my mind that when the time came to describe Grizel's mere outward appearance I should refuse her that word "beautiful" because of her tilted nose; but now that the time has come, I wonder at myself. Probably when I am chapters ahead I shall return to this one and strike out the word "beautiful," and then, as likely as not, I shall come back afterwards and put it in again. Whether it will be there at the end, God knows. Her eyes, at least, were beautiful. They were unusually far apart, and let you look straight into them, and never quivered; they were such clear, gray, searching eyes, they seemed always to be asking for the truth. And she had an adorable mouth. In repose it was, perhaps, hard, because it shut so decisively; but often it *screwed up provokingly* at one side, as when she

smiled, or was sorry, or for no particular re
for she seemed unable to control this vagary, w
was perhaps a little bit of babyhood that ha
gotten to grow up with the rest of her. At t
moments the essence of all that was character
and delicious about her seemed to have run to
mouth; so that to kiss Grizel on her crooked s
would have been to kiss the whole of her at o
She had a quaint way of nodding her head at
when she was talking. It made you forget w
she was saying, though it was really meant to h
precisely the opposite effect. Her voice was r
with many inflections. When she had much
say it gurgled like a stream in a hurry; but
cooing note was best worth remembering at
end of the day. There were times when
looked like a boy. Her almost gallant bearin
the poise of her head, her noble frankness — th
all had something in them of a princely boy w
had never known fear.

I have no wish to hide her defects; I woul
rather linger over them, because they were part o
Grizel, and I am sorry to see them go one by on
Thrums had not taken her to its heart. She w
a proud-purse, they said, meaning that she had
haughty walk. Her sense of justice was too gre
She scorned frailties that she should have pitie
(How strange to think that there was a time wh
pity was not the feeling that leaped to Grize

n first!) She did not care for study. She ed French and the pianoforte to please the ır; but she preferred to be sewing or dusting. :n she might have been reading, she was per- making for herself one of those costumes that yed every lady of Thrums who employed a maker; or, more probably, it was a delicious ient for a baby; for as soon as Grizel heard there was a new baby anywhere, all her intel- deserted her, and she became a slave. Books n irritated her because she disagreed with the ıor; and it was a torment to her to find other ple holding to their views when she was so ain that hers were right. In church she some- es rocked her arms; and the old doctor by her knew that it was because she could not get and contradict the minister. She was, I pre- ıe, the only young lady who ever dared to say t she hated Sunday because there was so much ing still in it.

Sitting still did not suit Grizel. At all other es she was happy; but then her mind wan- ed back to the thoughts that had lived too sely with her in the old days, and she was ubled. What woke her from these reveries s probably the doctor's hand placed very ten- ly on her shoulder, and then she would start, I wonder how long he had been watching her, l what were the grave thoughts behind his

cheerful face; for the doctor never looked m
cheerful than when he was drawing Grizel a
from the ugly past, and he talked to her as if
had noticed nothing; but after he went upstair
would pace his bedroom for a long time;
Grizel listened, and knew that he was think
about her. Then, perhaps, she would run up
him, and put her arms around his neck. Th
scenes brought the doctor and Grizel very cl
together; but they became rarer as she grew
and then for once that she was troubled she wa
hundred times irresponsible with glee, and "O
you dearest, darlingest," she would cry to him,
must dance,— I must, I must!—though it is a fa
day; and you must dance with your mother t
instant—I am so happy, so happy!" "Mothe
was his nickname for her, and she delighted
the word. She lorded it over him as if he we
her troublesome boy.

How could she be other than glorious whe
there was so much to do? The work inside th
house she made for herself, and outside the docto
made it for her. At last he had found for nurs
a woman who could follow his instructions liter
ally, who understood that if he said five o'cloc
for the medicine the chap of six would not do a
well, who did not in her heart despise the ther
mometer, and who resolutely prevented the patien
from skipping out of bed to change her pillow

slips because the minister was expected. Such tyranny enraged every sufferer who had been ill before and got better; but what they chiefly complained of to the doctor (and he agreed with a humourous sigh) was her masterfulness about fresh air and cold water. Windows were opened that had never been opened before (they yielded to her pressure with a groan); and as for cold water, it might have been said that a bath followed her wherever she went—not, mark me, for putting your hands and face in, not even for your feet; but in you must go, the whole of you, "as if," they said indignantly, "there was something the matter with our skin."

She could not gossip, not even with the doctor, who liked it of an evening when he had got into his carpet shoes. There was no use telling her a secret, for she kept it to herself for evermore. She had ideas about how men should serve a woman, even the humblest, that made the men gaze with wonder, and the women (curiously enough) with irritation. Her greatest scorn was for girls who made themselves cheap with men; and she could not hide it. It was a physical pain to Grizel to hide her feelings; they popped out in her face, if not in words, and were always in advance of her self-control. To the doctor this impulsiveness was pathetic; he *loved her* for it, but it sometimes *made him uneasy.*

He died in the scarlet-fever year. "I'm smitten," he suddenly said at a bedside; and a week afterwards he was gone.

"We must speak of it now, Grizel," he said, when he knew that he was dying.

She pressed his hand. She knew to what he was referring. "Yes," she said, "I should love you to speak of it now."

"You and I have always fought shy of it," he said, "making a pretence that it had altogether passed away. I thought that was best for you."

"Dearest, darlingest," she said, "I know—I have always known."

"And you," he said, "you pretended because you thought it was best for me."

She nodded. "And we saw through each other all the time," she said.

"Grizel, has it passed away altogether now?"

Her grip upon his hand did not tighten in the least. "Yes," she could say honestly, "it has altogether passed away."

"And you have no more fear?"

"No, none."

It was his great reward for all that he had done for Grizel.

"I know what you are thinking of," she said when he did not speak. "You are thinking of *the haunted* little girl you rescued seven years *ago.*"

"No," he answered; "I was thanking God for he brave, wholesome woman she has grown into; ınd for something else, Grizel — for letting me ive to see it."

"To do it," she said, pressing his hand to her ɔreast.

She was a strange girl, and she had to speak her mind. "I don't think God has done it all," she said. "I don't even think that He told you to do it. I think He just said to you, 'There is a painted lady's child at your door. You can save her if you like.'

"No," she went on, when he would have interposed; "I am sure He did not want to do it all. He even left a little bit of it to me to do myself. I love to think that I have done a tiny bit of it myself. I think it is the sweetest thing about God that He lets us do some of it ourselves. Do I hurt you, darling?"

No, she did not hurt him, for he understood her. "But you are naturally so impulsive," he said, "it has often been a sharp pain to me to see you so careful."

"It was not a pain to me to be careful; it was a joy. Oh, the thousand dear, delightful joys I have had with you!"

"It has made you strong, Grizel, and I rejoice n that; but sometimes I fear that it has made you *oo difficult to win.*"

"I don't want to be won," she told him.

"You don't quite mean that, Grizel."

"No," she said at once. She whispered to impulsively: "It is the only thing I am a afraid of now."

"What?"

"Love."

"You will not be afraid of it when it comes

"But I want to be afraid," she said.

"You need not," he answered. "The ma whom those clear eyes rest lovingly will be wo of it all. If he were not, they would be the to find him out."

"But need that make any difference?" asked. "Perhaps though I found him o should love him just the same."

"Not unless you loved him first, Grizel."

"No," she said at once again. "I am really afraid of love," she whispered to "You have made me so happy that I am a of nothing."

Yet she wondered a little that he was not a to die, but when she told him this he smiled said: "Everybody fears death except those are dying." And when she asked if he had thing on his mind, he said: "I leave the w without a care. Not that I have seen all I w fain have seen. Many a time, especially this year, when I have seen the mother in you croo

to some neighbour's child, I have thought to myself, 'I don't know my Grizel yet; I have seen her in the bud only,' and I would fain —" He broke off. "But I have no fears," he said. "As I lie here, with you sitting by my side, looking so serene, I can say, for the first time for half a century, that I have nothing on my mind.

"But, Grizel, I should have married," he told her. "The chief lesson my life has taught me is that they are poor critturs — the men who don't marry."

"If you had married," she said, "you might never have been able to help me."

"It is you who have helped me," he replied. "God sent the child; He is most reluctant to give any of us up. Ay, Grizel, that's what my life has taught me, and it's all I can leave to you." The last he saw of her, she was holding his hand, and her eyes were dry, her teeth were clenched; but there was a brave smile upon her face, for he had told her that it was thus he would like to see her at the end. After his death, she continued to live at the old house; he had left it to her ("I want it to remain in the family," he said), with all his savings, which were quite sufficient for the needs of such a manager. He had also left her plenty to do, and that was a still sweeter legacy.

And the other Jacobites, what of them? Hi, *where are you, Corp?* Here he comes, grinning,

in his spleet new uniform, to demand our tic
of us. He is now the railway porter. S
Tommy left Thrums "steam" had arrived i
and Corp had by nature such a gift for giving l
gage the twist which breaks everything inside
you dump it down that he was inevitably appoi
porter. There was no travelling to Thrums w
out a ticket. At Tilliedrum, which was the ju
tion for Thrums, you showed your ticket and w
then locked in. A hundred yards from Thru
Corp leaped upon the train and fiercely demand
your ticket. At the station he asked you threat
ingly whether you had given up your ticket. Ev
his wife was afraid of him at such times, and h
her ticket ready in her hand.

His wife was one Gavinia, and she had no fe
of him except when she was travelling. To h
face she referred to him as a doited sumph, but t
Grizel pleading for him she admitted that despit
his warts and quarrelsome legs he was a great bi
muckle sonsy, stout, buirdly well set up, wise-like
havering man. When first Corp had proposed t
her, she gave him a clout on the head; and so littl
did he know of the sex that this discouraged him
He continued, however, to propose and she t
clout him until he heard, accidentally (he woke u
in church), of a man in the Bible who had wooe
a woman for seven years, and this example he de
termined to emulate; but when Gavinia heard of

she was so furious that she took him at once. Dazed by his good fortune, he rushed off with it to his aunt, whom he wearied with his repetition of the great news.

"To your bed wi' you," she said, yawning.

"Bed!" cried Corp, indignantly. "And so, auntie, says Gavinia, 'Yes,' says she, 'I'll hae you.' Those were her never-to-be-forgotten words."

"You pitiful object," answered his aunt. "Men hae been married afore now without making sic a stramash."

"I daursay," retorted Corp; "but they hinna married Gavinia." And this is the best known answer to the sneer of the cynic.

He was a public nuisance that night, and knocked various people up after they had gone to bed, to tell them that Gavinia was to have him. He was eventually led home by kindly though indignant neighbours; but early morning found him in the country, carrying the news from farm to farm.

"No, I winna sit down," he said; "I just cried in to tell you Gavinia is to hae me." Six miles from home he saw a mud house on the top of a hill, and ascended genially. He found at their porridge a very old lady with a nut-cracker face, and a small boy. We shall see them again. "Auld wifie," said Corp, "I dinna ken you, but I've just stepped *up to tell you that* Gavinia is to hae me."

It made him the butt of the sportive. If h
Gavinia were nigh, they gathered their fowls ro
them and then said: "Hens, I didna bring
here to feed you, but just to tell you that
vinia is to hae me." This flustered Gavinia;
Grizel, who enjoyed her own jokes too heartily
have more than a polite interest in those of o
people, said to her: "How can you be angry!
think it was just sweet of him."

"But was it no vulgar?"

"Vulgar!" said Grizel. "Why, Gavinia, t
is how every lady would like a man to love her."

And then Gavinia beamed. "I'm glad you
that," she said; "for, though I wouldna tell C
for worlds, I fell likit it."

But Grizel told Corp that Gavinia liked it.

"It was the proof," she said, smiling, "that yo
have the right to marry her. You have sho
your ticket. Never give it up, Corp."

About a year afterwards Corp, armed in his Su
day stand, rushed to Grizel's house, occasionall
stopping to slap his shiny knees. "Grizel," he crie
"there's somebody come to Thrums without
ticket!" Then he remembered Gavinia's instru
tions. "Mrs. Shiach's compliments," he said po
derously, "and it's a boy."

"Oh, Corp!" exclaimed Grizel, and immediate
began to put on her hat and jacket.

Corp watched her uneasily. "Mrs. Shiach

ments," he said firmly, "and he's owei to be bathed yet; but she's awid to show ff to you," he hastened to add. "'Tell ,' was her first words."

:ll Grizel"! They were among the first words ıy mothers. None, they were aware, would e the news with quite such glee as she. might think her cold and reserved with elves, but to see the look on her face as she ›ver a baby, and to know that the baby was ! What a way she had with them! She s welcomed them as if in coming they had med a great feat. That is what babies are for from the beginning. Had they been o speak they would have said "Tell Grizel" ;elves.

ınd Mrs. Shiach's compliments," Corp re-›ered, "and she would be windy if you would the bairn at the christening."

'should love it, Corp! Have you decided e name?"

ang syne. Gin it were a lassie we were to er Grizel ——"

)h, how sweet of you!"

ıfter the finest lassie we ever kent," continued stoutly. "But I was sure it would be a ".

Why?"

Because if it was a laddie it was to be called

after Him," he said, with emphasis on the last word; "and thinks I to mysel', 'He'll find a way.' What a crittur he was for finding a way, Grizel! And he lookit so holy a' the time. Do you mind that swear word o' his—'stroke'? It just meant 'damn'; but he could make even 'damn' look holy."

"You are to call the baby Tommy?"

"He'll be christened Thomas Sandys Shiach," said Corp. "I hankered after putting something out o' the Jacobites intil his name; and I says to Gavinia, 'Let's call him Thomas Sandys Stroke Shiach,' says I, 'and the minister'll be nane the wiser'; but Gavinia was scandalized."

Grizel reflected. "Corp," she said, "I am sure Gavinia's sister will expect to be asked to carry the baby. I don't think I want to do it."

"After you promised!" cried Corp, much hurt. "I never kent you to break a promise afore."

"I will do it, Corp," she said, at once.

She did not know then that Tommy would be in church to witness the ceremony, but she knew before she walked down the aisle with T. S Shiach in her arms. It was the first time that Tommy and she had seen each other for seven years. That day he almost rivalled his namesake in the interests of the congregation, who, however, took prodigious care that he should not see it—all except Grizel; she smiled a welcome to him, and he knew that *her serene gray* eyes were watching him.

CHAPTER V

THE TOMMY MYTH

On the evening before the christening, Aaron Latta, his head sunk farther into his shoulders, his beard gone grayer, no other perceptible difference in a dreary man since we last saw him in the book of Tommy's boyhood, had met the brother and sister at the station, a barrow with him for their luggage. It was a great hour for him as he wheeled the barrow homeward, Elspeth once more by his side; but he could say nothing heartsome in Tommy's presence, and Tommy was as uncomfortable in his. The old strained relations between these two seemed to begin again at once. They were as self-conscious as two mastiffs meeting in the street; and both breathed a sigh of relief when Tommy fell behind.

"You're bonny, Elspeth," Aaron then said eagerly. "I'm glad, glad to see you again."

"And him too, Aaron?" Elspeth pleaded.

"He took you away frae me."

"He has brought *me* back."

"*Ay, and he has but* to whistle to you and away

you go wi' him again. He's ower grand to lang here now."

"You don't know him, Aaron. We are to a long time. Do you know Mrs. McLean in us to stay with her? I suppose she thought house was so small. But Tommy said, 'The h of the man who befriended us when we were dren shall never be too small for us.'"

"Did he say that? Ay, but, Elspeth, I w rather hear what you said."

"I said it was to dear, good Aaron Latta I going back, and to no one else."

"God bless you for that, Elspeth."

"And Tommy," she went on, "must hav old garret room again, to write as well as s in, and the little room you partitioned off kitchen will do nicely for me."

"There's no a window in it," replied Aa "but it will do fine for you, Elspeth." He almost chuckling, for he had a surprise in wai for her. "This way," he said excitedly, w she would have gone into the kitchen, and flung open the door of what had been his warp room. The warping-mill was gone — everyt that had been there was gone. What met delighted eyes of Elspeth and Tommy was a parlour, which became a bedroom when opened that other door.

"You are a leddy now, Elspeth," Aaron

husky with pride, "and you have a leddy's room. Do you see the piano?"

He had given up the warping, having at last "twa three hunder'" in the bank, and all the work he did now was at a loom which he had put into the kitchen to keep him out of languor. "I have sorted up the garret, too, for you," he said to Tommy, "but this is Elspeth's room."

"As if Tommy would take it from me!" said Elspeth, running into the kitchen to hug this dear Aaron.

"You may laugh," Aaron replied vindictively, "but he is taking it frae you already"; and later, when Tommy was out of the way, he explained his meaning. "I did it all for you, Elspeth; 'Elspeth's room,' I called it. When I bought the mahogany arm-chair, 'That's Elspeth's chair,' I said to mysel'; and when I bought the bed, 'It's hers,' I said. Ay; but I was soon disannulled o' that thait, for, in spite of me, they were all got for him. Not a rissom in that room is yours or mine, Elspeth; every muhlen belongs to him."

"But who says so, Aaron? I am sure he won't."

"I dinna ken them. They are leddies that come here in their carriages to see the house where Thomas Sandys was born."

"But, Aaron, he was born in London!"

"*They think he was* born in this house," Aaron

replied doggedly; "and it's no for me to c
him."

"Oh, Aaron, you pretend——"

"I was never very fond o' him," Aaron ad
"but I winna cheapen Jean Myles's bairn, an
they chap at my door and say they wou
to see the room Thomas Sandys was bor
let them see the best room I have. Sc
how he has laid hands on your parlor, E
Afore I can get rid o' them they gie a sque
cry, 'Was that Thomas Sandys's bed?' anc
it was. That's him taking the very bed fr
Elspeth."

"You might at least have shown them
in the garret," she said.

"It's a shilpit bit thing," he answered,
winna cheapen him. They're curious, too,
his favourite seat."

"It was the fender," she declared.

"It was," he assented, "but it's no for
cheapen him, so I let them see your new mal
chair. 'Thomas Sandys's chair,' they call
they sit down in it reverently. They winn
leave you the piano. 'Was this Thomas S
piano?' they speir. 'It was,' says I, and syr
gowp at it." His under lip shot out, a su
that he was angry. "I dinna blame hi
said, "but he had the same masterful
scooping everything into his lap when he

ldie, and I like him none the mair for it"; and m this position Aaron would not budge.

"Quite right, too," Tommy said, when he heard it. "But you can tell him, Elspeth, that we all allow no more of those prying women to me in." And he really meant this, for he was a odest man that day, was Tommy. Nevertheless, was, perhaps, a little annoyed to find, as the days ent on, that no more ladies came to be turned way.

He heard that they had also been unable to sist the desire to shake hands with Thomas San-ys's schoolmaster. "It must have been a plea-ure to teach him," they said to Cathro.

"Ah me, ah me!" Cathro replied enigmatically. t had so often been a pleasure to Cathro to thrash im!

"Genius is odd," they said. "Did he ever give ou any trouble?"

"We were like father and son," he assured hem. With natural pride he showed them the nk-pot into which Thomas Sandys had dipped as a boy. They were very grateful for his interesting reminiscence that when the pot was too full Thomas inked his fingers. He presented several of them with the ink-pot.

Two ladies, who came together, bothered him by asking what the Hugh Blackadder competition was. They *had been* advised to inquire of him

about Thomas Sandys's connection therewith by another schoolmaster, a Mr. Ogilvy, whom they had met in one of the glens.

Mr. Cathro winced, and then explained with emphasis that the Hugh Blackadder was a competition in which the local ministers were the sole judges; he therefore referred the ladies to them. The ladies did go to a local minister for enlightenment, to Mr. Dishart; but, after reflecting, Mr. Dishart said that it was too long a story, and this answer seemed to amuse Mr. Ogilvy, who happened to be present.

It was Mr. McLean who retailed this news to Tommy. He and Ailie had walked home from church with the newcomers on the day after their arrival, the day of the christening. They had not gone into Aaron's house, for you are looked askance at in Thrums if you pay visits on Sundays, but they had stood for a long time gossiping at the door, which is permitted by the strictest. Ailie was in a twitter, as of old, and not able even yet to speak of her husband without an apologetic look to the ladies who had none. And oh, how proud she was of Tommy's fame! Her eyes were an offering to him.

"Don't take her as a sample of the place, though," Mr. McLean warned him, "for Thrums *does not* catch fire so readily as London." It was *quite true.* "I was at the school wi' him," they

said up there, and implied that this damned his book.

But there were two faithful souls, or, more strictly, one, for Corp could never have carried it through without Gavinia's help. Tommy called on them promptly at their house in the Bellies Brae (four rooms, but a lodger), and said, almost before he had time to look, that the baby had Corp's chin and Gavinia's eyes. He had made this up on the way. He also wanted to say, so desirous was he of pleasing his old friends, that he should like to hold the baby in his arms; but it was such a thundering lie that even an author could not say it.

Tommy sat down in that house with a very warm heart for its inmates; but they chilled him — Gavinia with her stiff words, and Corp by looking miserable instead of joyous.

"I expected you to come to me first, Corp," said Tommy, reproachfully. "I had scarcely a word with you at the station."

"He couldna hae presumed," replied Gavinia, primly.

"I couldna hae presumed," said Corp, with a groan.

"Fudge!" Tommy said. "You were my greatest friend, and I like you as much as ever, Corp."

Corp's face shone, but Gavinia said at once,

"You werena sic great friends as that; were man?"

"No," Corp replied gloomily.

"Whatever has come over you both?" Tommy, in surprise. "You will be saying Gavinia, that we never played at Jacobites i Den!"

"I dinna deny that Corp and me play Gavinia answered determinedly, "but you d You said to us, 'Think shame,' you said, 't playing vulgar games when you could be rea superior books.' They were his very words, they no, man?" she demanded of her unh husband, with a threatening look.

"They were," said Corp, in deepest gloom.

"I must get to the bottom of this," said Tom rising, "and as you are too great a coward, C to tell the truth with that shameless woman g ering at you, out you go, Gavinia, and take y disgraced bairn with you. Do as you are told, besom, for I am Captain Stroke again."

Corp was choking with delight as Gavinia w drew haughtily. "I was sure you would sort h he said, rubbing his hands, "I was sure you wa the kind to be ashamed o' auld friends."

"But what does it mean?"

"She has a notion," Corp explained, growi grave again, "that it wouldna do for you to o the like o' us. 'We mauna cheapen him,' she s

wanted you to see that we hinna been cheap-
; you." He said, in a sepulchral voice,
ere has been leddies here, and they want to
what Thomas Sandys was like as a boy. It's
hey speir for, but Gavinia she just shoves me
' sight, and says she, 'Leave them to me.'"
rp told Tommy some of the things Gavinia
about Thomas Sandys as a boy: how he sat
in church, and, instead of going bird-nesting,
n the ground listening to the beautiful little
lers overhead, and gave all his pennies to
r children, and could repeat the Shorter Cate-
n, beginning at either end, and was very re-
ful to the aged and infirm, and of a yielding
sition, and said, from his earliest years, "I
want to be great; I just want to be good."
How can she make them all up?" Tommy
d, with respectful homage to Gavinia.
rp, with his eye on the door, produced from
ath the bed a little book with coloured pic-
. It was entitled "Great Boyhoods," by "Aunt
tha." "She doesna make them up," he whis-
d; "she gets them out o' this."
And you back her up, Corp, even when she
I was not your friend!"
It was like a t' knife intil me," replied loyal
; "every time I forswore you it was like a t'
e, but I did it, ay, and I'll go on doing it if
think my *friendship* cheapens you."

Tommy was much moved, and gripped his lieutenant by the hand. He also called Gavinia, and, before she could ward him off, the terful rogue had saluted her on the cheek. "T said Tommy, "is to show you that I am as fo the old times and my old friends as ever, and moment you deny it I shall take you to m Gavinia, that you want another kiss."

"He's just the same!" Corp remarked ec cally, when Tommy had gone.

"I dinna deny," Gavinia said, "but what fell taking"; and for a time they ruminated.

"Gavinia," said Corp, suddenly, "I would wonder but what he's a gey lad wi' the women

"What makes you think that?" she repl coldly, and he had the prudence not to say. should have followed his hero home to be d abused of this monstrous notion, for even while was being propounded Tommy was sitting in su an agony of silence in a woman's presence that s could not resist smiling a crooked smile at hi His want of words did not displease Grizel; s was of opinion that young men should always be little awed by young ladies.

He had found her with Elspeth on his retur home. Would Grizel call and be friendly? he ha asked himself many times since he saw her i church yesterday, and Elspeth was as curiou Each wanted to know what the other thought

her, but neither had the courage to inquire, they both wanted to know so much. Her name had been mentioned but casually, not a word to indicate that she had grown up since they saw her last. The longer Tommy remained silent, the more, he knew, did Elspeth suspect him. He would have liked to say, in a careless voice, "Rather pretty, isn't she?" but he felt that this little Elspeth would see through him at once.

For at the first glance he had seen what Grizel was, and a thrill of joy passed through him as he drank her in; it was but the joy of the eyes for the first moment, but it ran to his heart to say, "This is the little hunted girl that was!" and Tommy was moved with a manly gladness that the girl who once was so fearful of the future had grown into this. The same unselfish delight in her for her own sake came over him again when he shook hands with her in Aaron's parlor. This glorious creature with the serene eyes and the noble shoulders had been the hunted child of the Double Dykes! He would have liked to race back into the past and bring little Grizel here to look. How many boyish memories he recalled! and she was in every one of them. His heart held nothing but honest joy in this meeting after so many years; he longed to tell her how sincerely he was still her friend. Well, why don't you tell her, Tommy? It is a *thing you are good* at, and you have been pol-

ishing up the phrases ever since she passed down the aisle with Master Shiach in her arms; you have even planned out a way of putting Grizel at her ease, and behold, she is the only one of the three who is at ease. What has come over you? Does the reader think it was love? No, it was only that pall of shyness; he tried to fling it off, but could not. Behold Tommy being buried alive!

Elspeth showed less contemptibly than her brother, but it was Grizel who did most of the talking. She nodded her head and smiled crookedly at Tommy, but she was watching him all the time. She wore a dress in which brown and yellow mingled as in woods on an autumn day, and the jacket had a high collar of fur, over which she watched him. Let us say that she was watching to see whether any of the old Tommy was left in him. Yet, with this problem confronting her, she also had time to study the outer man, Tommy the dandy — his velvet jacket (a new one), his brazen waistcoat, his poetic neckerchief, his spotless linen. His velvet jacket was to become the derision of Thrums, but Tommy took his bonneting haughtily, like one who was glad to suffer for a Cause. There were to be meetings here and there where people told with awe how many shirts he sent weekly to the wash. Grizel disdained his dandy tastes; why did not Elspeth strip him of them? *And oh, if he* must wear that absurd waistcoat,

ld she not see that it would look another thing he second button was put half an inch farther k? How sinful of him to spoil the shape of silly velvet jacket by carrying so many letters he pockets! She learned afterwards that he car- all those letters because there was a check in of them, he did not know which, and her sense orderliness was outraged. Elspeth did not tice these things. She helped Tommy by her lplessness. There is reason to believe that ce in London, when she had need of a new t, but money there was none, Tommy, looking ry defiant, studied ladies' hats in the shop-win- ows, brought all his intellect to bear on them, ith the result that he did concoct out of Elspeth's d hat a new one which was the admired of O. P. ym and friends, who never knew the name of e artist. But obviously he could not take proper re of himself, and there is a kind of woman, of hom Grizel was one, to whose breasts this help- ssness makes an unfair appeal. Oh, to dress him roperly! She could not help liking to be a nother to men; she wanted them to be the most noble characters, but completely dependent on her.

Tommy walked home with her, and it seemed t first as if Elspeth's absence was to be no help to him. He could not even plagiarize from "Sandys on Woman." No one knew so well the kind of thing he should be saying, and no one could

have been more anxious to say it, but a weig
shyness sat on the lid of Tommy. Having
half an hour raged internally at his misfortune
now sullenly embraced it. "If I am this sor
an ass, let me be it in the superlative degree,"
may be conceived saying bitterly to himself.
addressed Grizel coldly as "Miss McQueen,"
name she had taken by the doctor's wish
after she went to live with him.

"There is no reason why you should call
that," she said. "Call me Grizel, as you used
do."

"May I?" replied Tommy, idiotically. H
knew it was idiotic, but that mood now had g
of him.

"But I mean to call you Mr. Sandys," she s
decisively.

He was really glad to hear it, for to be calle
Tommy by anyone was now detestable to hi
(which is why I always call him Tommy i
these pages). So it was like him to say, wit
a sigh, "I had hoped to hear you use the ol
name."

That sigh made her look at him sharply. H
knew that he must be careful with Grizel, and tha
she was irritated, but he had to go on.

"It is strange to me," said Sentimental Tommy
"to be back here after all those years, walking thi
familiar road once more with you. I thought i

uld make me feel myself a boy again, but, heigh- it has just the opposite effect: I never felt so as I do to-day."

His voice trembled a little, I don't know why. izel frowned.

"But you never were as old as you are to-day, re you?" she inquired politely. It whisked ommy out of dangerous waters and laid him at r feet. He laughed, not perceptibly or audibly, course, but somewhere inside him the bell rang. o one could laugh more heartily at himself than ommy, and none bore less malice to those who rought him to land.

"That, at any rate, makes me feel younger," he id candidly; and now the shyness was in full ight.

"Why?" asked Grizel, still watchful.

"It is so like the kind of thing you used to say me when we were boy and girl. I used to nrage you very much, I fear," he said, half leefully.

"Yes," she admitted, with a smile, "you did."

"And then how you rocked your arms at me, Grizel! Do you remember?"

She remembered it all so well! This rocking of the arms, as they called it, was a trick of hers that signified sudden joy or pain. They hung rigid by her side, and then shook violently with emotion.

"Do you ever rock them now when pe annoy you?" he asked.

"There has been no one to annoy me," replied demurely, "since you went away."

"But I have come back," Tommy said, look hopefully at her arms.

"You see they take no notice of you."

"They don't remember me yet. As soon they do they will cry out."

Grizel shook her head confidently, and in t she was pitting herself against Tommy, alway bold thing to do.

"I have been to see Corp's baby," he said su denly; and this was so important that she stopp in the middle of the road.

"What do you think of him?" she asked, qui anxiously.

"I thought," replied Tommy, gravely, a making use of one of Grizel's pet phrases, thought he was just sweet."

"Isn't he!" she cried; and then she knew th he was making fun of her. Her arms rocked.

"Hurray!" cried Tommy, "they recognize r now! Don't be angry, Grizel," he begged h "You taught me, long ago, what was the rig thing to say about babies, and how could I be su it was you until I saw your arms rocking?"

"It was so like you," she said reproachfully, " try to make me do it."

"It was so unlike you," he replied craftily, "to [illegible] me succeed. And, after all, Grizel, if I was [illegible]rrid in the old days I always apologized."

"Never!" she insisted.

"Well, then," said Tommy, handsomely, "I do [illegible] now"; and then they both laughed gaily, and I [illegible]ink Grizel was not sorry that there was a little [illegible] the boy who had been horrid left in Tommy — [illegible]ast enough to know him by.

"He'll be vain," her aged maid, Maggy Ann, [illegible]aid curiously to her that evening. They were all [illegible]urious about Tommy.

"I don't know that he is vain," Grizel replied [illegible]guardedly.

"If he's no vain," Maggy Ann retorted, "he's the first son of Adam it could be said o'. I jalouse it's his bit book."

"He scarcely mentioned it."

"Ay, then, it's his beard."

Grizel was sure it was not that.

"Then it'll be the women," said Maggy Ann.

"Who knows!" said Grizel of the watchful eyes; but she smiled to herself. She thought not incorrectly that she knew one woman of whom Mr. Sandys was a little afraid.

About the same time Tommy and Elspeth were discussing her. Elspeth was in bed, and Tommy had come into the room to kiss her good-night — he had never once omitted doing it since they

went to London, and he was always to do it, neither of them was ever to marry.

"What do you think of her?" Elspeth ask This was their great time for confidences.

"Of whom?" Tommy inquired lightly.

"Grizel."

He must be careful.

"Rather pretty, don't you think?" he s gazing at the ceiling.

She was looking at him keenly, but he mana to deceive her. She was much relieved, and co say what was in her heart. "Tommy," she s "I think she is the most noble-looking girl I saw, and if she were not so masterful in her n ner she would be beautiful." It was nice Elspeth to say it, for she and Grizel were n very great friends.

Tommy brought down his eyes. "Did think as much of her as that?" he said. "It str me that her features were not quite classic. nose is a little tilted, is it not?"

"Some people like that kind of nose," rep Elspeth.

"It is not classic," Tommy said sternly.

CHAPTER VI

GHOSTS THAT HAUNT THE DEN

LOOKING through the Tommy papers of this period, like a conscientious biographer, I find among them manuscripts that remind me how diligently he set to work at his new book the moment he went North, and also letters which, if printed, would show you what a wise and good man Tommy was. But while I was fingering those, there floated from them to the floor a loose page, and when I saw that it was a chemist's bill for oil and liniment I remembered something I had nigh forgotten. "Eureka!" I cried. "I shall tell the story of the chemist's bill, and some other biographer may print the letters."

Well, well! but to think that this scrap of paper should flutter into view to damn him after all those years!

The date is Saturday, May 28, by which time Tommy had been a week in Thrums without doing anything very reprehensible, so far as Grizel knew. She watched for telltales as for a mouse to show at its hole, and at the worst, I think, she saw

only its little head. That was when To was talking beautifully to her about her doctor. He would have done wisely to avoid subject; but he was so notoriously good at dolences that he had to say it. He had tho it out, you may remember, a year ago, but hesit to post it; and since then it had lain hea within him, as if it knew it was a good thing pined to be up and strutting.

He said it with emotion; evidently Dr. Queen had been very dear to him, and any o girl would have been touched; but Grizel stiffe and when he had finished, this is what she quite snappily:

"He never liked you."

Tommy was taken aback, but replied, gentle dignity, "Do you think, Grizel, I woul that make any difference in my estimate of hi

"But you never liked him," said she; and that he thought of it, this was true also. It useless to say anything about the artistic instin her; she did not know what it was, and would had plain words for it as soon as he told Please to picture Tommy picking up his beau speech and ramming it back into his pocket it were a rejected manuscript.

"I am sorry you should think so meanly of Grizel," he said with manly forbearance, and she thought it all out carefully that night

cided that she had been hasty. She could not lp watching Tommy for backslidings, but oh, was sweet to her to decide that she had not and any.

"It was I who was horrid," she announced to m frankly, and Tommy forgave her at once. he offered him a present: "When the doctor ed I gave some of his things to his friends; it is e Scotch custom, you know. He had a new vercoat; it had been worn but two or three times. should be so glad if you would let me give it to ou for saying such sweet things about him. I hink it will need very little alteration."

Thus very simply came into Tommy's possession the coat that was to play so odd a part in his history. "But oh, Grizel," said he, with mock reproach, "you need not think that I don't see through you! Your deep design is to cover me up. You despise my velvet jacket!"

"It does not——" Grizel began, and stopped.

"It is not in keeping with my doleful countenance," said Tommy, candidly; "that was what you were to say. Let me tell you a secret, Grizel: I wear it to spite my face. Sha'n't give up my velvet jacket for anybody, Grizel; not even for you." He was in gay spirits, because he knew she liked him again; and she saw that was the reason, and it warmed her. She was least able to resist Tommy when he was *most a boy*, and it was actually watch-

ful Grizel who proposed that he and she and speth should revisit the Den together. How(since the days of their childhood had Grizel dered it alone, thinking of those dear times, ma up her mind that if ever Tommy asked her t into the Den again with him she would not g(place was so much sweeter to her than it cou to him. And yet it was Grizel herself wh(saying now, "Let us go back to the Den."

Tommy caught fire. "We sha'n't go back cried defiantly," as men and women. Let boy and girl again, Grizel. Let us have that S day we missed long ago. I missed a Saturd purpose, Grizel, so that we should have it no

She shook her head wistfully, but she was that Tommy would fain have had one o Saturdays back. Had he waxed sentimenta would not have gone a step of the way with into the past, but when he was so full of gle could take his hand and run back into it.

"But we must wait until evening," Tommy "until Corp is unharnessed; we must not hu feelings of Corp by going back to the Den wi him."

"How mean of me not to think of C(Grizel cried; but the next moment she was she had not thought of him, it was so delicic have proof that Tommy was more loyal.

"But we can't turn back the clock, ca

Corp?" she said to the fourth of the conspirators, to which Corp replied, with his old sublime confidence, "He'll find a wy."

And at first it really seemed as if Tommy had found a way. They did not go to the Den four in a line or two abreast — nothing so common as that. In the wild spirits that mastered him he seemed to be the boy incarnate, and it was always said of Tommy by those who knew him best that if he leaped back into boyhood they had to jump with him. Those who knew him best were with him now. He took command of them in the old way. He whispered, as if Black Cathro were still on the prowl for him. Corp of Corp had to steal upon the Den by way of the Silent Pool, Grizel by the Queen's Bower, Elspeth up the burn-side, Captain Stroke down the Reekie Brothpot. Grizel's arms rocked with delight in the dark, and she was on her way to the Cuttle Well, the trysting-place, before she came to and saw with consternation that Tommy had been ordering her about.

She was quite a sedate young lady by the time she joined them at the well, and Tommy was the first to feel the change. "Don't you think this is all rather silly?" she said, when he addressed her as the Lady Griselda, and it broke the spell. Two girls shot up into women, a beard grew on Tommy's chin, and Corp became a father. Grizel had *blown Tommy's pretty* project to dust just when

he was most gleeful over it; yet, instead of be resentment, he pretended not even to know she was the culprit.

"Corp," he said ruefully, "the game is And "Listen," he said, when they had sat d crushed, by the old Cuttle Well, "do you anything?"

It was a very still evening. "I hear n said Corp, "but the trickle o' the burn. did you hear?"

"I thought I heard a baby cry," replied To with a groan. "I think it was your baby, Did you hear it, Grizel?"

She understood, and nodded.

"And you, Elspeth?"

"Yes."

"My bairn!" cried the astounded Corp.

"Yours," said Tommy, reproachfully; "a has done for us. Ladies and gentlemen, the is up."

Yes, the game was up, and she was glad, said to herself, as they made their melancho grimace of what had once been an enchante But she felt that Tommy had been very forb to her, and that she did not deserve it. Unc edly he had ordered her about, but in so doin he not been making half-pathetic sport of h self — and was it with him that she was an for ordering, or with herself for obeying?

hould she not obey, when it was all a jest? as if she still had some lingering fear of ny. Oh, she was ashamed of herself. She say something nice to him at once. About ? About his book, of course. How base of ot to have done so already! but how good n to have overlooked her silence on that topic!

was not ignorance of its contents that had her silent. To confess the horrid truth, Grizel ead the book suspiciously, looking as through roscope for something wrong—hoping not to it, but peering minutely. The book, she , was beautiful; but it was the writer of the she was peering for — the Tommy she had n so well, what had he grown into? In her she had exulted from the first in his success, she should have been still more glad (should ot?) to learn that his subject was woman; no, that had irritated her. What was per- even worse, she had been still more irritated earing that the work was rich in sublime ghts. As a boy, he had maddened her most grandest moments. I can think of no other se for her.

e would not accept it as an excuse for her- now. What she saw with scorn was that she lways suspecting the worst of Tommy. Very bly there was *not* a thought in the book that

had been put in with his old complacent w
of the head. "Oh, am I not a wonder!" he
to cry, when he did anything big; but that w
reason why she should suspect him of being
ceited still. Very probably he really and
felt what he wrote — felt it not only at the
but also next morning. In his boyhood
Cathro had christened him Sentimental To
but he was a man now, and surely the sentim
ities in which he had dressed himself were
aside for ever, like old suits of clothes. So
decided eagerly, and she was on the point o
ing him how proud she was of his book,
Tommy, who had thus far behaved so wel
sudden went to pieces.

He and Grizel were together. Elspeth
little in front of them, walking with a gent
who still wondered what they meant by sayin
they had heard his baby cry. "For he's no
Corp had said earnestly to them all; "thoug
awid for the time to come when I'll be able to
him to the Den and let him see the Jacobites'

There was nothing startling in this rem
far as Grizel could discover; but she saw
had an immediate and incomprehensible eff
Tommy. First, he blundered in his talk a
was thinking deeply of something else; th
face shone as it had been wont to light up
boyhood when he was suddenly enraptured

elf; and lastly, down his cheek and into his
d there stole a tear of agony. Obviously,
my was in deep woe for somebody or some-
g.

was a chance for a true lady to show that
anly sympathy of which such exquisite things
aid in the first work of T. Sandys; but it merely
riated Grizel, who knew that Tommy did not
nearly so deeply as she this return to the Den,
therefore, what was he in such distress about? It
silly sentiment of some sort, she was sure of
. In the old days she would have asked him
eriously to tell her what was the matter with
; but she must not do that now — she dare not
n rock her indignant arms; she could only
k silently by his side, longing fervently to shake
.

He had quite forgotten her presence; indeed, she
not really there, for a number of years had
ed, and he was Corp Shiach, walking the Den
ne. To-morrow he was to bring his boy to
w him the old Lair and other fondly remembered
ts; to-night he must revisit them alone. So
set out blithely, but, to his bewilderment, he
ld not find the Lair. It had not been a tiny
low where muddy water gathered; he remem-
ed an impregnable fortress full of men whose
nour rattled as they came and went; so this
ld not be the Lair. He had taken the wrong

way to it, for the way was across a lagoon, up a deep-flowing river, then by horse till the rocky ledge terrified all four-footed things; no, up a grassy slope had never been the way. He came night after night, trying different ways; but he could not find the golden ladder, though all the time he knew that the Lair lay somewhere over there. When he stood still and listened he could hear the friends of his youth at play, and they seemed to be calling: "Are you coming, Corp? Why does not Corp come back?" but he could never see them, and when he pressed forward their voices died away. Then at last he said sadly to his boy: "I shall never be able to show you the Lair, for I cannot find the way to it." And the boy was touched, and he said: "Take my hand, father, and I will lead you to the Lair; I found the way long ago for myself."

It took Tommy about two seconds to see all this, and perhaps another half-minute was spent in sad but satisfactory contemplation of it. Then he felt that, for the best effect, Corp's home life was too comfortable; so Gavinia ran away with a soldier. He was now so sorry for Corp that the tear rolled down. But at the same moment he saw how the effect could be still further heightened by doing away with his friend's rude state of health, and he immediately jammed him between the buffers of two railway carriages, and gave him a wooden leg.

It was at this point that a lady who had kept her arms still too long rocked them frantically, then said, with cutting satire: "Are you not feeling well, or have you hurt yourself? You seem to be very lame." And Tommy woke with a start, to see that he was hobbling as if one of his legs were timber to the knee.

"It is nothing," he said modestly. "Something Corp said set me thinking; that is all."

He had told the truth, and if what he imagined was twenty times more real to him than what was really there, how could Tommy help it? Indignant Grizel, however, who kept such a grip of facts, would make no such excuse for him.

"Elspeth!" she called.

"There is no need to tell her," said Tommy. But Grizel was obdurate.

"Come here, Elspeth," she cried vindictively. "Something Corp said a moment ago has made your brother lame."

Tommy was lame; that was all Elspeth and Corp heard or could think of as they ran back to him. When did it happen? Was he in great pain? Had he fallen? Oh, why had he not told Elspeth at once?

"It is nothing," Tommy insisted, a little fiercely.

"He says so," Grizel explained, "not to alarm us. But he is suffering horribly. Just before I called to you his face was all drawn up in pain."

This made the sufferer wince. "That was an other twinge," she said promptly. "What is to be done, Elspeth?"

"I think I could carry him," suggested Corp, with a forward movement that made Tommy stamp his foot — the wooden one.

"I am all right," he told them testily, and looking uneasily at Grizel.

"How brave of you to say so!" said she.

"It is just like him," Elspeth said, pleased with Grizel's remark.

"I am sure it is," Grizel said, so graciously.

It was very naughty of her. Had she given him a chance he would have explained that it was all a mistake of Grizel's. That had been his intention; but now a devil entered into Tommy and spoke for him.

"I must have slipped and sprained my ankle," he said. "It is slightly painful; but I shall be able to walk home all right, Corp, if you let me use you as a staff."

I think he was a little surprised to hear himself saying this; but, as soon as it was said, he liked it. He was Captain Stroke playing in the Den again, after all, and playing as well as ever. Nothing being so real to Tommy as pretence, I daresay he even began to feel his ankle hurting him. "Gently," he begged of Corp, with a gallant smile, and clenching his teeth so that the pain should not make him

out before the ladies. Thus, with his lieuten-'s help, did Stroke manage to reach Aaron's ase, making light of his mishap, assuring them erily that he should be all right to-morrow, and efully avoiding Grizel's eye, though he wanted y much to know what she thought of him (and herself) now.

There were moments when she did not know at to think, and that always distressed Grizel, ough it was a state of mind with which Tommy uld keep on very friendly terms. The truth seemed o monstrous for belief. Was it possible she had isjudged him? Perhaps he really had sprained is ankle. But he had made no pretence of that first, and besides,—yes, she could not be mis-ken,—it was the other leg.

She soon let him see what she was thinking. "I am afraid it is too serious a case for me," she aid, in answer to a suggestion from Corp, who had profound faith in her medical skill, "but, if you ike,"—she was addressing Tommy now,—"I shall all at Dr. Gemmell's, on my way home, and ask im to come to you."

"There is no necessity; a night's rest is all I eed," he answered hastily.

"Well, you know best," she said, and there was look on her face which Thomas Sandys could ndure from no woman.

"On second thoughts," he said, "I think it

would be advisable to have a doctor. Thank very much, Grizel. Corp, can you help me t my foot on to that chair? Softly — ah! — u

His eyes did not fall before hers. "And v you mind asking him to come at once, Gri he said sweetly.

She went straight to the doctor.

CHAPTER VII

THE BEGINNING OF THE DUEL

It was among old Dr. McQueen's sayings that when he met a man who was certified to be in no way remarkable he wanted to give three cheers. There are few of them, even in a little place like Thrums; but David Gemmell was one.

So McQueen had always said, but Grizel was not so sure. "He is very good-looking, and he does not know it," she would point out. "Oh, what a remarkable man!"

She had known him intimately for nearly six years now, ever since he became the old doctor's assistant on the day when, in the tail of some others, he came to Thrums, aged twenty-one, to apply for the post. Grizel had even helped to choose him; she had a quaint recollection of his being submitted to her by McQueen, who told her to look him over and say whether he would do —an odd position in which to place a fourteen-year-old girl, but Grizel had taken it most seriously, and, indeed, of the two men only Gemmell *dared to laugh.*

"You should not laugh when it is so im
tant," she said gravely; and he stood ab
although I believe he chuckled again whe
retired to his room for the night. She was in
room next morning as soon as he had left i
smell the curtains (he smoked), and see whe
he folded his things up neatly and used both
brush and the comb, but did not use pomade,
slept with his window open, and really too
bath instead of merely pouring the water int
and laying the sponge on top (oh, she k
them!) — and her decision, after some days,
that, though far from perfect, he would do, i
loved her dear darling doctor sufficiently.
this time David was openly afraid of her, w
Grizel noticed, and took to be, in the circumstan
a satisfactory sign.

She watched him narrowly for the next year,
after that she ceased to watch him at all.
was like a congregation become so sure o
minister's soundness that it can risk going to sl
To begin with, he was quite incapable of pret
ing to be anything he was not. Oh, how unli
boy she had once known! His manner, like
voice, was quiet. Being himself the son of a do
he did not dodder through life amazed at
splendid eminence he had climbed to, which is
weakness of Scottish students when they gradu
and often for fifty years afterwards. How s

as to Dr. McQueen, never forgetting the re-
due to gray hairs, never hinting that the new
l of medicine knew many things that were
n from the old, and always having the sense
pport McQueen when she was scolding him
is numerous naughty ways. When the old
r came home now on cold nights it was not
his cravat in his pocket, and Grizel knew
well who had put it round his neck. Mc-
n never had the humiliation, so distressing to
d doctor, of being asked by patients to send
sistant instead of coming himself. He thought
preferred him, and twitted David about it;
Grizel knew that David had sometimes to
them to prefer the old man. She knew
when he said good-night and was supposed to
gone to his lodgings, he was probably off to
poor house where, if not he, a tired woman
sit the long night through by a sufferer's bed-
and she realized with joy that his chief
n for not speaking of such things was that he
them as part of his natural work and never
knew that he was kind. He was not specially
l, he had taken no honours either at school or
ge, and he considered himself to be a very
ary young man. If you had said that on this
t you disagreed with him, his manner probably
d have implied that he thought you a bit of
s.

When a new man arrives in Thrums, the wo
come to their doors to see whether he is g
looking. They said No of Tommy when he
back, but it had been an emphatic Yes for
Gemmell. He was tall and very slight, an
twenty-seven, as at twenty-one, despite the gr
of a heavy moustache, there was a boyishness a
his appearance, which is, I think, what women
in a man more than anything else. They
drawn to him by it, and they love him out of
when it goes. I suppose it brings back to
some early, beautiful stage in the world's hi
when men and women played together wit
fear. Perhaps it lay in his smile, which w
winning that wrinkled old dames spoke of it,
had never met the word before, smiles being
known in Thrums, where in a workaday worl
find it sufficient either to laugh or to look thr
His dark curly hair was what Grizel was mos
picious of; he must be vain of that, she tho
until she discovered that he was quite sensitive
being mentioned, having ever detested his curls
eyesore, and in his boyhood clipped them sav
to the roots. He had such a firm chin, if
had been another such chin going a-beggi
should have liked to clap it on to Tommy Sa

Tommy Sandys! All this time we have
neglecting that brave sufferer, and while we
his ankle is swelling and swelling. Well, G

s not so inconsiderate, for she walked very t and with an exceedingly determined mouth Dr. Gemmell's lodgings. He was still in dgings, having refused to turn Grizel out of r house, though she had offered to let it to him. ae left word, the doctor not being in, that he as wanted at once by Mr. Sandys, who had rained his ankle.

Now, then, Tommy!

For an hour, perhaps until she went to bed, she emained merciless. She saw the quiet doctor with the penetrating eyes examining that ankle, aking a few questions, and looking curiously at is patient; then she saw him lift his hat and walk out of the house.

It gave her pleasure; no, it did not. While she thought of this Tommy she despised, there came in front of him a boy who had played with her long ago when no other child would play with her, and now he said, "You have grown cold to me, Grizel," and she nodded assent, and little wells of water rose to her eyes and lay there because she had nodded assent.

She had never liked Dr. Gemmell so little as when she saw him approaching her house next morning. The surgery was still attached to it, and very often he came from there, his visiting-book in his hand, to tell her of his patients, even to consult her; indeed, *to talk to* Grizel about his work

without consulting her would have been diff
for it was natural to her to decide what was
for everybody. These consultations were ver
professional, but from her first coming to the
doctor's house she had taken it as a matter of c
that in his practice, as in affairs relating to his
and buttons, she should tell him what to do a
should do it. McQueen had introduced his
tant to this partnership half-shamefacedly and
a cautious wink over the little girl's head
Gemmell fell into line at once, showing he
new stethoscope as gravely as if he must aba
it at once should not she approve, which fin
haviour, however, was quite thrown away on G
who, had he conducted himself otherwise, v
merely have wondered what was the matter
the man; and as she was eighteen or more l
she saw that she had exceeded her duties, i
then, of course, too late to cease doing it.

She knew now how good, how forbearin
had been to the little girl, and that it was part
cause he was acquainted with her touching hi
The grave courtesy with which he had a
treated her—and which had sometimes given
a girl a secret thrill of delight, it was so sw
Grizel to be respected—she knew now to be le
natural manner to women than something
came to him in her presence because he who
her so well thought her worthy of deference

helped her more, far more, than if she had seen urn to love. Yet as she received him in her lor now—her too spotless parlor, for not even the es in the grate were visible, which is a mistake — she was not very friendly. He had discovered at Tommy was, and as she had been the edium she could not blame him for that, but how uld he look as calm as ever when such a plorable thing had happened?

"What you say is true; I knew it before I asked ou to go to him, and I knew you would find it ut; but please to remember that he is a man of enius, whom it is not for such as you to judge."

That was the sort of haughty remark she held ady for him while they talked of other cases; but was never uttered, for by and by he said:

"And then, there is Mr. Sandys's ankle. A nasty ccident, I am afraid."

Was he jesting? She looked at him sharply. "Have you not been to see him yet?" she asked.

He thought she had misunderstood him. He had been to see Mr. Sandys twice, both last night and this morning.

And he was sure it was a sprain?

Unfortunately it was something worse — dislocation; further mischief might show itself presently.

"Hæmorrhage into the neighbouring joint on inflammation?" she asked scientifically and with scorn.

"Yes."

Grizel turned away from him. "I think
she said.

Well, possibly not, if Mr. Sandys was ca
and kept his foot from the ground for the
week. The doctor did not know that she wa
spising him, and he proceeded to pay Tomm
compliment. "I had to reduce the dislocatio
course," he told her, "and he bore the wr
splendidly, though there is almost no pain n
acute."

"Did he ask you to tell me that?" Grizel
thirsting to inquire, but she forbore. Unwittin
however, the doctor answered the question.
could see," he said, "that Mr. Sandys made li
of his sufferings to save his sister pain. I can
recall ever having seen a brother and sister
attached."

That was quite true, Grizel admitted to herse
In all her recollections of Tommy she could n
remember one critical moment in which Elspe
had not been foremost in his thoughts. It passe
through her head, "Even now he must make su
that Elspeth is in peace of mind before he can ca
to triumph over me," and she would perhaps ha
felt less bitter had he put his triumph first.

His triumph! Oh, she would show him wheth
it was a triumph. He had destroyed for ever h
faith in David Gemmell. The quiet, observant do

who had such an eye for the false, had been ved as easily as all the others, and it made her ery lonely. But never mind; Tommy should out, and that within the hour, that there was whom he could not cheat. Her first impulse, ys her first impulse, was to go straight to his and tell him what she thought of him. Her nd, which was neater, was to send by messen- her compliments to Mr. and Miss Sandys, and ld they, if not otherwise engaged, come and e tea with her that afternoon? Not a word in note about the ankle, but a careful sentence to effect that she had seen Dr. Gemmell to-day, proposed asking him to meet them.

Maggy Ann, who had conveyed the message, ne back with the reply. Elspeth regretted that y could not accept Grizel's invitation, owing to accident to her brother being *very much more* ious than Grizel seemed to think. "I can't derstand," Elspeth added, "why Dr. Gemmell d not tell you this when he saw you."

"Is it a polite letter?" asked inquisitive Maggy nn, and Grizel assured her that it was most polite. I hardly expected it," said the plain-spoken dame, for I'm thinking by their manner it's more than an be said of yours."

"I merely invited them to come to tea."

"And him wi' his leg broke! Did you no ken he was lying on chairs?"

"I did not know it was so bad as that, M
Ann. So my letter seemed to annoy him, did
said Grizel, eagerly, and, I fear, well pleased.

"It angered her most terrible," said Maggy
"but no him. He gave a sort of a laugh wh
read it."

"A laugh!"

"Ay, and syne she says, 'It is most heartle
Grizel; she does not even ask how you are to
one would think she did not know of the accid
and she says, 'I have a good mind to write h
very stiff letter.' And says he in a noble, melanch
voice, 'We must not hurt Grizel's feelings,'
says. And she says, 'Grizel thinks it was noth
because you bore it so cheerfully; oh, how li
she knows you!' she says; and 'You are too forg
ing,' she says. And says he, 'If I have anything
forgive Grizel for, I forgive her willingly.' A
syne she quieted down and wrote the letter."

Forgive her! Oh, how it enraged Grizel! H
like the Tommy of old to put it in that wa
There never had been a boy so good at forgivi
people for his own crimes, and he always looke
so modest when he did it. He was reclining o
his chairs at this moment, she was sure he was, fo
giving her in every sentence. She could have e
dured it more easily had she felt sure that he wa
seeing himself as he was; but she remembered hi
too well to have any hope of that.

She put on her bonnet, and took it off again; a ribble thing, remember, for Grizel to be in a state indecision. For the remainder of that day she as not wholly inactive. Meeting Dr. Gemmell in e street, she impressed upon him the advisability not allowing Mr. Sandys to move for at least a eek.

"He might take a drive in a day or two," the octor thought, "with his sister."

"He would be sure to use his foot," Grizel maintained, "if you once let him rise from his chair; ou know they all do." And Gemmell agreed that he was right. So she managed to give Tommy as rksome a time as possible.

But next day she called. To go through another day without letting him see how despicable she thought him was beyond her endurance. Elspeth was a little stiff at first, but Tommy received her heartily and with nothing in his manner to show that she had hurt his finer feelings. His leg (the wrong leg, as Grizel remembered at once) was extended on a chair in front of him; but instead of nursing it ostentatiously as so many would have done, he made humourous remarks at its expense. "The fact is," he said cheerily, "that so long as I don't move I never felt better in my life. And I daresay I could walk almost as well as either of you, only my tyrant of a doctor won't let me try."

"He told me *you had* behaved splendidly," said

Grizel, "while he was reducing the disloca
How brave you are! You could not have end
more stoically though there had been nothing
matter with it."

"It was soon over," Tommy replied lightly
think Elspeth suffered more than I."

Elspeth told the story of his heroism. "I c
not stay in the room," she said; "it was too terr
And Grizel despised too tender-hearted Elspet
that; she was so courageous at facing pain he
But Tommy had guessed that Elspeth was
bling behind the door, and he had called out, "I
cry, Elspeth; I am all right; it is nothing at

"How noble!" was Grizel's comment, whe
heard of this; and then Elspeth was her f
again, insisted on her staying to tea, and went
the kitchen to prepare it. Aaron was out.

The two were alone now, and in the cir
stances some men would have given the lad
opportunity to apologize, if such was her d
But Tommy's was a more generous nature
manner was that of one less sorry to be misju
than anxious that Grizel should not suffer
much from remorse. If she had asked his pa
then and there, I am sure he would have rep
"Right willingly, Grizel," and begged her not to
another thought to the matter. What is of
importance, Grizel was sure of this also, and it
the magnanimity of him that especially ann

There seemed to be no disturbing it. Even hen she said, "Which foot is it?" he answered, The one on the chair," quite graciously, as if she d asked a natural question.

Grizel pointed out that the other foot must be ed of being a foot in waiting. It had got a little xercise, Tommy replied lightly, last night and gain this morning, when it had helped to convey im to and from his bed.

Had he hopped? she asked brutally.

No, he said; he had shuffled along. Half rising, e attempted to show her humourously how he alked nowadays — tried not to wince, but had to. gh, that was a twinge! Grizel sarcastically ffered her assistance, and he took her shoulder ratefully. They crossed the room — a tedious jourey. "Now let me see if you can manage alone," he says, and suddenly deserts him.

He looked rather helplessly across the room. ew sights are so pathetic as the strong man of esterday feeling that the chair by the fire is a disant object to-day. Tommy knew how pathetic it as, but Grizel did not seem to know.

"Try it," she said encouragingly; "it will do ou good."

He got as far as the table, and clung to it, his eth set. Grizel clapped her hands. "Excellently one!" she said, with fell meaning, and recomended him to move up and down the room for a

little; he would feel ever so much the better for it afterwards.

The pain — was — considerable, he said. Oh, she saw that, but he had already proved himself so good at bearing pain, and the new school of surgeons held that it was wise to exercise an injured limb.

Even then it was not a reproachful glance that Tommy gave her, though there was some sadness in it. He moved across the room several times, a groan occasionally escaping him. "Admirable!" said his critic. "Bravo! Would you like to stop now?"

"Not until you tell me to," he said determinedly, but with a gasp.

"It must be dreadfully painful," she replied coldly, "but I should like you to go on." And he went on until suddenly he seemed to have lost the power to lift his feet. His body swayed; there was an appealing look on his face. "Don't be afraid; you won't fall," said Grizel. But she had scarcely said it when he fainted dead away, and went down at her feet.

"Oh, how dare you!" she cried in sudden flame, and she drew back from him. But after a moment she knew that he was shamming no longer — or she knew it and yet could not quite believe it; for, *hurrying* out of the room for water, she had no *sooner passed* the door than she swiftly put back

ad as if to catch him unawares; but he lay
nless.

e sight of her dear brother on the floor para-
Elspeth, who could only weep for him, and
o him to look at her and speak to her. But in
an emergency Grizel was as useful as any
r, and by the time Gemmell arrived in haste
nvalid was being brought to. The doctor was
actical man who did not ask questions while
was something better to do. Had he asked
as he came in, Grizel would certainly have
: "He wanted to faint to make me believe he
y has a bad ankle, and somehow he managed
o it." And if the doctor had replied that peo-
can't faint by wishing, she would have said that
did not know Mr. Sandys.

But, with few words, Gemmell got his patient
k to the chairs, and proceeded to undo the ban-
es that were round his ankle. Grizel stood by,
sting silently. She had often assisted the doc-
s, but never before with that scornful curl of her
. So the bandages were removed and the ankle
l bare. It was very much swollen and dis-
oured, and when Grizel saw this she gave a
le cry, and the ointment she was holding slipped
m her hand. For the first time since he came
Thrums, she had failed Gemmell at a patient's
e.

"I had not expected it to be — like this," she

said in a quivering voice, when he looked at her in surprise.

"It will look much worse to-morrow," he assured them, grimly. "I can't understand, Miss Sandys, how this came about."

"Miss Sandys was not in the room," said Grizel, abjectly, "but I was, and I ——"

Tommy's face was begging her to stop. He was still faint and in pain, but all thought of himself left him in his desire to screen her. "I owe you an apology, doctor," he said quickly, "for disregarding your instructions. It was entirely my own fault; I would try to walk."

"Every step must have been agony," the doctor rapped out; and Grizel shuddered.

"Not nearly so bad as that," Tommy said, for her sake.

"Agony," insisted the doctor, as if, for once, he enjoyed the word. "It was a mad thing to do, as surely you could guess, Grizel. Why did you not prevent him?"

"She certainly did her best to stop me," Tommy said hastily; "but I suppose I had some insane fit on me, for do it I would. I am very sorry, doctor."

His face was wincing with pain, and he spoke jerkily; but the doctor was still angry. He felt that there was something between these two which *he did not* understand, and it was strange to him,

d unpleasant, to find Grizel unable to speak for erself. I think he doubted Tommy from that our. All he said in reply, however, was: "It is nnecessary to apologize to me; you yourself are e only sufferer."

But was Tommy the only sufferer? Gemmell ft, and Elspeth followed him to listen to those recious words which doctors drop, as from a vial, n the other side of a patient's door; and then rizel, who had been standing at the window with ead averted, turned slowly round and looked at he man she had wronged. Her arms, which had been hanging rigid, the fists closed, went out to im to implore forgiveness. I don't know how he held herself up and remained dry-eyed, her whole being wanted so much to sink by the side of his poor, tortured foot, and bathe it in her tears.

So, you see, he had won; nothing to do now ut forgive her beautifully. Go on, Tommy; you re good at it.

But the unexpected only came out of Tommy. Never was there a softer heart. In London the old lady who sold matches at the street corner had got all his pence; had he heard her, or any other, mourning a son sentenced to the gallows, he would immediately have wondered whether he might take the condemned one's place. (What a speech Tommy could have delivered from the scaffold!) There was nothing he would not jump at doing for

a woman in distress, except, perhaps, destroy his note-book. And Grizel was in anguish. She was his suppliant, his brave, lonely little playmate of the past, the noble girl of to-day, Grizel whom he liked so much. As through a magnifying-glass he saw her topheavy with remorse for life, unable to sleep of nights, crushed and ——

He was not made of the stuff that could endure it. The truth must out. "Grizel," he said impulsively, "you have nothing to be sorry for. You were quite right. I did not hurt my foot that night in the Den, but afterwards, when I was alone, before the doctor came. I wricked it here intentionally in the door. It sounds incredible; but I set my teeth and did it, Grizel, because you had challenged me to a duel, and I would not give in."

As soon as it was out he was proud of himself for having the generosity to confess it. He looked at Grizel expectantly.

Yes, it sounded incredible, and yet she saw that it was true. As Elspeth returned at that moment, Grizel could say nothing. She stood looking at him only over her high collar of fur. Tommy actually thought that she was admiring him.

CHAPTER VIII

WHAT GRIZEL'S EYES SAID

To be the admired of women — how Tommy had fought for it since first he drank of them in Pym's sparkling pages! To some it seems to be easy, but to him it was a labour of Sisyphus. Everything had been against him. But he concentrated. No labour was too Herculean; he was prepared, if necessary, to walk round the world to get to the other side of the wall across which some men can step. And he did take a roundabout way. It is my opinion, for instance, that he wrote his book in order to make a beginning with the ladies.

That as it may be, at all events he is on the right side of the wall now, and here is even Grizel looking wistfully at him. Had she admired him for something he was not (and a good many of them did that) he would have been ill satisfied. He wanted her to think him splendid because he was splendid, and the more he reflected the more clearly he saw that he had done a big thing. How many men would have had the courage to wrick their foot *as he had done?* (He shivered when he thought

of it.) And even of these Spartans how many would have let the reward slip through their fingers rather than wound the feelings of a girl? These had not been his thoughts when he made confession; he had spoken on an impulse; but now that he could step out and have a look at himself, he saw that this made it a still bigger thing. He was modestly pleased that he had not only got Grizel's admiration, but earned it, and he was very kind to her when next she came to see him. No one could be more kind to them than he when they admired him. He had the most grateful heart, had our Tommy.

When next she came to see him! That was while his ankle still nailed him to the chair, a fortnight or so during which Tommy was at his best, sending gracious messages by Elspeth to the many who called to inquire, and writing hard at his new work, pad on knee, so like a brave soul whom no unmerited misfortune could subdue that it would have done you good merely to peep at him through the window. Grizel came several times, and the three talked very ordinary things, mostly reminiscences; she was as much a plain-spoken princess as ever, but often he found her eyes fixed on him wistfully, and he knew what they were saying; they spoke so eloquently that he was a little nervous lest Elspeth should notice. It was delicious to Tommy to feel that there was this little

unspoken something between him and Grizel; he half regretted that the time could not be far distant when she must put it into words—as soon, say, as Elspeth left the room; an exquisite moment, no doubt, but it would be the plucking of the flower.

Don't think that Tommy conceived Grizel to be in love with him. On my sacred honour, that would have horrified him.

Curiously enough, she did not take the first opportunity Elspeth gave her of telling him in words how much she admired his brave confession. She was so honest that he expected her to begin the moment the door closed, and now that the artistic time had come for it, he wanted it; but no. He was not hurt, but he wondered at her shyness, and cast about for the reason. He cast far back into the past, and caught a little girl who had worn this same wistful face when she admired him most. He compared those two faces of the anxious girl and the serene woman, and in the wistfulness that sometimes lay on them both they looked alike. Was it possible that the fear of him which the years had driven out of the girl still lived a ghost's life to haunt the woman?

At once he overflowed with pity. As a boy he had exulted in Grizel's fear of him; as a man he could feel only the pain of it. There was no one, he thought, less to be dreaded of a woman than he, *oh, so sure Tommy was of that!* And he must lay

this ghost; he gave his whole heart to the laying of it.

Few men, and never a woman, could do a fine thing so delicately as he; but of course it included a divergence from the truth, for to Tommy afloat on a generous scheme the truth was a buoy marking sunken rocks. She had feared him in her childhood, as he knew well; he therefore proceeded to prove to her that she had never feared him. She had thought him masterful, and all his reminiscences now went to show that it was she who had been the masterful one.

"You must often laugh now," he said, "to remember how I feared you. The memory of it makes me afraid of you still. I assure you, I joukit back, as Corp would say, that day I saw you in church. It was the instinct of self-preservation. 'Here comes Grizel to lord it over me again,' I heard something inside me saying. You called me masterful, and yet I had always to give in to you. That shows what a gentle, yielding girl you were, and what a masterful character I was!"

His intention, you see, was, without letting Grizel know what he was at, to make her think he had forgotten certain unpleasant incidents in their past, so that, seeing they were no longer anything to him, they might the sooner become nothing to *her.* And she believed that he had forgotten, and *she was glad.* She smiled when he told her to go

on being masterful, for old acquaintance had made him like it. Hers, indeed, was a masterful nature; she could not help it; and if the time ever came when she must help it, the glee of living would be gone from her.

She did continue to be masterful — to a greater extent than Tommy, thus nobly behaving, was prepared for; and his shock came to him at the very moment when he was modestly expecting to receive the prize. She had called when Elspeth happened to be out; and though now able to move about the room with the help of a staff, he was still an interesting object. He saw that she thought so, and perhaps it made him hobble slightly more, not vainglorioously, but because he was such an artist. He ceased to be an artist suddenly, however, when Grizel made this unexpected remark:

"How vain you are!"

Tommy sat down, quite pale. "Did you come here to say that to me, Grizel?" he inquired, and she nodded frankly over her high collar of fur. He knew it was true as Grizel said it, but though taken aback, he could bear it, for she was looking wistfully at him, and he knew well what Grizel's wistful look meant; so long as women admired him Tommy could bear anything from them. "God knows I have little to be vain of," he said humbly.

"*Those are the people* who are most vain," she

replied; and he laughed a short laugh, which surprised her, she was so very serious.

"Your methods are so direct," he explained. "But of what am I vain, Grizel? Is it my book?"

"No," she answered, "not about your book, but about meaner things. What else could have made you dislocate your ankle rather than admit that you had been rather silly?"

Now "silly" is no word to apply to a gentleman, and, despite his forgiving nature, Tommy was a little disappointed in Grizel.

"I suppose it was a silly thing to do," he said, with just a touch of stiffness.

"It was an ignoble thing," said she, sadly.

"I see. And I myself am the meaner thing than the book, am I?"

"Are you not?" she asked, so eagerly that he laughed again.

"It is the first compliment you have paid my book," he pointed out.

"I like the book very much," she answered gravely. "No one can be more proud of your fame than I. You are hurting me very much by pretending to think that it is a pleasure to me to find fault with you."

There was no getting past the honesty of her, *and he was* touched by it. Besides, she did ad*mire him,* and that, after all, is the great thing,

en why say such things, Grizel?" he replied naturedly.

But if they are true?"

Still let us avoid them," said he; and at that was most distressed.

It is so like what you used to say when you a boy!" she cried.

You are so anxious to have me grow up," he lied, with proper dolefulness. "If you like the k, Grizel, you must have patience with the d of thing that produced it. That night in Den, when I won your scorn, I was in the pre- inary stages of composition. At such times an hor should be locked up; but I had got out, see. I was so enamoured of my little fancies t I forgot I was with you. No wonder you re angry."

"I was not angry with you for forgetting me," said sharply. (There was no catching Grizel, wever artful you were.) "But you were sigh- g to yourself, you were looking as tragic as if me dreadful calamity had occurred ——"

"The idea that had suddenly come to me was a uching one," he said.

"But you looked triumphant, too."

"That was because I saw I could make omething of it."

"Why did you walk as if you were lame?"

"The man I was thinking of," Tommy ex-

plained, "had broken his leg. I don't n telling you that it was Corp."

He ought to have minded telling her, f could only add to her indignation; but he wa conceited to give weight to that.

"Corp's leg was not broken," said pra Grizel.

"I broke it for him," replied Tommy; and he had explained, her eyes accused hin heartlessness.

"If it had been my own," he said, in defence, "it should have gone crack just the s

"Poor Gavinia! Had you no feeling for h

"Gavinia was not there," Tommy replie umphantly. "She had run off with a soldier.

"You dared to conceive that?"

"It helped."

Grizel stamped her foot. "You could take dear Gavinia's character with a smile!"

"On the contrary," said Tommy, "my bled for her. Did you not notice that I wa ing?" But he could not make Grizel smile to please her, he said, with a smile that wa very sincere: "I wish I were different, but t how ideas come to me—at least, all those tha of any value."

"Surely you could fight against them and them away?"

This to Tommy, who held out sugar to the

lure them to him! But still he treated her with consideration.

"That would mean my giving up writing altogether, Grizel," he said kindly.

"Then why not give it up?"

Really! But she admired him, and still he bore with her.

"I don't like the book," she said, "if it is written at such a cost."

"People say the book has done them good, Grizel."

"What does that matter, if it does you harm?" In her eagerness to persuade him, her words came pell-mell. "If writing makes you live in such an unreal world, it must do you harm. I see now what Mr. Cathro meant, long ago, when he called you Senti——"

Tommy winced. "I remember what Mr. Cathro called me," he said, with surprising hauteur for such a good-natured man. "But he does not call me that now. No one calls me that now, except you, Grizel."

"What does that matter," she replied distressfully, "if it is true? In the definition of sentimentality in the dictionary——"

He rose indignantly. "You have been looking me up in the dictionary, have you, Grizel?"

"Yes, the night you told me you had hurt your *ankle intentionally.*"

He laughed, without mirth now. "I thought you had put that down to vanity."

"I think," she said, "it was vanity that gave you the courage to do it." And he liked one word in this remark.

"Then you do give me credit for a little courage?"

"I think you could do the most courageous things," she told him, "so long as there was no real reason why you should do them."

It was a shot that rang the bell. Oh, our Tommy heard it ringing. But, to do him justice, he bore no malice; he was proud, rather, of Grizel's marksmanship. "At least," he said meekly, "it was courageous of me to tell you the truth in the end?" But, to his surprise, she shook her head.

"No," she replied; "it was sweet of you. You did it impulsively, because you were sorry for me, and I think it was sweet. But impulse is not courage."

So now Tommy knew all about it. His plain-spoken critic had been examining him with a candle, and had paid particular attention to his defects; but against them she set the fact that he had done something chivalrous for her, and it held her heart, though the others were in possession of the head. "How like a woman!" he thought, with *a pleased smile.* He knew them!

Still he was chagrined that she made so little of

his courage, and it was to stab her that he said, with subdued bitterness: "I always had a suspicion that I was that sort of person, and it is pleasant to have it pointed out by one's oldest friend. No one will ever accuse you of want of courage, Grizel."

She was looking straight at him, and her eyes did not drop, but they looked still more wistful. Tommy did not understand the courage that made her say what she had said, but he knew he was hurting her; he knew that if she was too plain-spoken it was out of loyalty, and that to wound Grizel because she had to speak her mind was a shame — yes, he always knew that.

But he could do it; he could even go on: "And it is satisfactory that you have thought me out so thoroughly, because you will not need to think me out any more. You know me now, Grizel, and can have no more fear of me."

"When was I ever afraid of you?" she demanded. She was looking at him suspiciously now.

"Never as a girl?" he asked. It jumped out of him. He was sorry as soon as he had said it.

There was a long pause. "So you remembered it all the time," she said quietly. "You have been making pretence — again!"

He asked her to forgive him, and she nodded her head at once. "But why did you pretend to have *forgotten*?"

"I thought it would please you, Grizel."

"Why should pretence please me?" She rose suddenly, in a white heat. "You don't mean to say that you think I am afraid of you still?"

He said No a moment too late. He knew it was too late.

"Don't be angry with me, Grizel," he begged her, earnestly. "I am so glad I was mistaken. It made me miserable. I have been a terrible blunderer, but I mean well; I misread your eyes."

"My eyes?"

"They have always seemed to be watching me, and often there was such a wistful look in them—it reminded me of the past."

"You thought I was still afraid of you! Say it," said Grizel, stamping her foot. But he would not say it. It was not merely fear that he thought he had seen in her eyes, you remember. This was still his comfort, and, I suppose, it gave the touch of complacency to his face that made Grizel merciless. She did not mean to be merciless, but only to tell the truth. If some of her words were scornful, there was sadness in her voice all the time, instead of triumph. "For years and years," she said, standing straight as an elvint, "I have been able to laugh at all the ignorant fears of my childhood; and if you don't know why I have watched you and been unable to help watching you since you came back, I shall tell you. But I think

you might have guessed, you who write books about women. It is because I liked you when you were a boy. You were often horrid, but you were my first friend when every other person was against me. You let me play with you when no other boy or girl would let me play. And so, all the time you have been away, I have been hoping that you were growing into a noble man; and when you came back, I watched to see whether you were the noble man I wanted you so much to be, and you are not. Do you see now why my eyes look wistful? It is because I wanted to admire you, and I can't."

She went away, and the great authority on women raged about the room. Oh, but he was galled! There had been five feet nine of him, but he was shrinking. By and by the red light came into his eyes.

CHAPTER IX

GALLANT BEHAVIOUR OF T. SANDYS

THERE were now no fewer than three men engaged, each in his own way, in the siege of Grizel, nothing in common between them except insulted vanity. One was a broken fellow who took for granted that she preferred to pass him by in the street. His bow was also an apology to her for his existence. He not only knew that she thought him wholly despicable, but agreed with her. In the long ago (yesterday, for instance) he had been happy, courted, esteemed; he had even esteemed himself, and so done useful work in the world. But she had flung him to earth so heavily that he had made a hole in it out of which he could never climb. There he lay damned, hers the glory of destroying him — he hoped she was proud of her handiwork. That was one Thomas Sandys, the one, perhaps, who put on the velvet jacket in the morning. But it might be number two who took that jacket off at night. He was a good-natured cynic, vastly amused by the airs this little girl put *on before* a man of note, and he took a malicious

pleasure in letting her see that they entertained him. He goaded her intentionally into expressions of temper, because she looked prettiest then, and trifled with her hair (but this was in imagination only), and called her a quaint child (but this was beneath his breath). The third — he might be the one who wore the jacket — was a haughty boy who was not only done with her for ever, but meant to let her see it. (His soul cried, Oh, oh, for a conservatory and some of society's darlings, and Grizel at the window to watch how he got on with them!) And now that I think of it, there was also a fourth: Sandys, the grave author, whose life (in two vols. 8vo.) I ought at this moment to be writing, without a word about the other Tommies. They amused him a good deal. When they were doing something big he would suddenly appear and take a note of it.

The boy, who was stiffly polite to her (when Tommy was angry he became very polite), told her that he had been invited to the Spittal, the seat of the Rintoul family, and that he understood there were some charming girls there.

"I hope you will like them," Grizel said pleasantly.

"If you could see how they will like me!" he wanted to reply; but of course he could not, and unfortunately there *was no* one by to say it for him *Tommy often felt this* want of a secretary.

The abject one found a glove of Grizel's, she did not know she had lost, and put it i pocket. There it lay, unknown to her. He k that he must not even ask them to bury it him in his grave. This was a little thing to but too much for him. He saw his effects b examined after all that was mortal of T. Sa had been consigned to earth, and this pat little glove coming to light. Ah, then, then G would know! By the way, what would she known? I am sure I cannot tell you. Nor c Tommy, forced to face the question in this vi way, have told you. Yet, whatever it was, it him some moist moments. If Grizel saw hi this mood, her reproachful look implied tha was sentimentalizing again. How little this understood him!

The man of the world sometimes came upo glove in his pocket, and laughed at it, as such do when they recall their callow youth. He walks with Grizel without her knowing tha accompanied him; or rather, he let her com was so eager. In his imagination (for bright the dreams of Thomas!) he saw her looking ingly after him, just as the dog looks; and not being really a cruel man, he would call his shoulder, "Put on your hat, little woman can come." Then he conceived her wandering him through the Den and Caddam Wood, cli

to his arm and looking up adoringly at him. "What a loving little soul it is!" he said, and pinched her ear, whereat she glowed with pleasure. "But I forgot," he would add, bantering her; "you don't admire me. Heigh-ho! Grizel wants to admire me, but she can't!" He got some satisfaction out of these flights of fancy, but it had a scurvy way of deserting him in the hour of greatest need; where was it, for instance, when the real Grizel appeared and fixed that inquiring eye on him?

He went to the Spittal several times, Elspeth with him when she cared to go; for Lady Rintoul and all the others had to learn and remember that, unless they made much of Elspeth, there could be no T. Sandys for them. He glared at anyone, male or female, who, on being introduced to Elspeth, did not remain, obviously impressed, by her side. "Give pleasure to Elspeth or away I go," was written all over him. And it had to be the right kind of pleasure, too. The ladies must feel that she was more innocent than they, and talk accordingly. He would walk the flower-garden with none of them until he knew for certain that the man walking it with little Elspeth was a person to be trusted. Once he was convinced of this, however, he was very much at their service, and so little to be trusted himself that perhaps they should have had careful brothers also. He told them, *one at a time*, that they were strangely un-

like all the other women he had known, and held their hands a moment longer than was absolutely necessary, and then went away, leaving them and him a prey to conflicting and puzzling emotions.

Lord Rintoul, whose hair was so like his skin that in the family portraits he might have been painted in one colour, could never rid himself of the feeling that it must be a great thing to a writing chap to get a good dinner; but her ladyship always explained him away with an apologetic smile which went over his remarks like a piece of india-rubber, so that in the end he had never said anything. She was a slight, pretty woman of nearly forty, and liked Tommy because he remembered so vividly her coming to the Spittal as a bride. He even remembered how she had been dressed — her white bonnet, for instance.

"For long," Tommy said, musing, "I resented other women in white bonnets; it seemed profanation."

"How absurd!" she told him, laughing. "You must have been quite a small boy at the time."

"But with a lonely boy's passionate admiration for beautiful things," he answered; and his gravity was a gentle rebuke to her. "It was all a long time ago," he said, taking both her hands in his, "but I never forget, and, dear lady, I have often wanted to thank you." What he was thanking her for is not precisely clear, but she knew that the

artistic temperament is an odd sort of thing, and from this time Lady Rintoul liked Tommy, and even tried to find the right wife for him among the families of the surrounding clergy. His step was sometimes quite springy when he left the Spittal; but Grizel's shadow was always waiting for him somewhere on the way home, to take the life out of him, and after that it was again, oh, sorrowful disillusion! oh, world gone gray! Grizel did not admire him. T. Sandys was no longer a wonder to Grizel. He went home to that as surely as the labourer to his evening platter.

And now we come to the affair of the Slugs. Corp had got a holiday, and they were off together fishing the Drumly Water, by Lord Rintoul's permission. They had fished the Drumly many a time without it, and this was to be another such day as those of old. The one who woke at four was to rouse the other. Never had either waked at four; but one of them was married now, and any woman can wake at any hour she chooses, so at four Corp was pushed out of bed, and soon thereafter they took the road. Grizel's blinds were already up. "Do you mind," Corp said, "how often, when we had boasted we were to start at four and didna get roaded till six, we wriggled by that window so that Grizel shouldna see us?"

"She usually *did see* us," Tommy replied ruefully. "*Grizel always* spotted us, Corp, when we

had anything to hide, and missed us when we were anxious to be seen."

"There was no jouking her," said Corp. "Do you mind how that used to bother you?" a senseless remark to a man whom it was bothering still—or shall we say to a boy? For the boy came back to Tommy when he heard the Drumly singing; it was as if he had suddenly seen his mother looking young again. There had been a thundershower as they drew near, followed by a rush of wind that pinned them to a dike, swept the road bare, banged every door in the glen, and then sank suddenly as if it had never been, like a mole in the sand. But now the sun was out, every fence and farm-yard rope was a string of diamond drops. There was one to every blade of grass; they lurked among the wild roses; larks, drunken with song, shook them from their wings. The whole earth shone so gloriously with them that for a time Tommy ceased to care whether he was admired. We can pay nature no higher compliment.

But when they came to the Slugs! The Slugs of Kenny is a wild crevice through which the Drumly cuts its way, black and treacherous, into a lovely glade where it gambols for the rest of its short life; you would not believe, to see it laughing, that it had so lately escaped from prison. To *the Slugs* they made their way — not to fish, for any *trout that* are there are thinking for ever of the

out and of nothing else, but to eat their lun-
on, and they ate it sitting on the mossy stones
ir persons had long ago helped to smooth, and
king at a roan-branch, which now, as then,
s trailing in the water.

There were no fish to catch, but there was a boy
ying to catch them. He was on the opposite
nk; had crawled down it, only other boys can
ll how, a barefooted urchin of ten or twelve, with
enormous bagful of worms hanging from his
cket button. To put a new worm on the hook
thout coming to destruction, he first twisted his
gs about a young birch, and put his arms round

He was after a big one, he informed Corp,
ough he might as well have been fishing in a
atise on the art of angling.

Corp exchanged pleasantries with him; told him
at Tommy was Captain Ure, and that he was
s faithful servant Alexander Bett, both of Edin-
urgh. Since the birth of his child, Corp had
come something of a humourist. Tommy was
ot listening. As he lolled in the sun he was
rning, without his knowledge, into one of the
ther Tommies. Let us watch the process.

He had found a half-fledged mavis lying dead
n the grass. Remember also how the larks had
ung after rain.

Tommy lost sight and sound of Corp and the
oy. What he seemed to see was a baby lark

that had got out of its nest sideways, a fall of a foot only, but a dreadful drop for a baby. "I can get back this way," its mother said, and she it the way, which was quite easy, but when baby tried to leap, it fell on its back. Then mother marked out lines on the ground, from to the other of which it was to practise hop and soon it could hop beautifully so long mother was there to say every moment, "O beautifully you hop!" "Now teach me to up," the little lark said, meaning that it want fly; and the mother tried to do that also, b vain; she could soar up, up, up bravely, but not explain how she did it. This distressed very much, and she thought hard about how had learned to fly long ago last year, but all could recall for certain was that you sudden it. "Wait till the sun comes out after rain said, half remembering. "What is sun? W rain?" the little bird asked. "If you cannot me to fly, teach me to sing." "When the comes out after rain," the mother replied, 'I you will know how to sing." The rain came glued the little bird's wings together. "I never be able to fly nor to sing," it wailed. of a sudden, it had to blink its eyes; for a gl light had spread over the world, catching leaf and twig and blade of grass in tears, and ting a smile into every tear. The baby

breast swelled, it did not know why; and it fluttered from the ground, it did not know how. "The sun has come out after the rain," it trilled. "Thank you, sun; thank you, thank you! Oh, mother, did you hear me? I can sing!" And it floated up, up, up, crying, "Thank you, thank you, thank you!" to the sun. "Oh, mother, do you see me? I am flying!" And being but a baby, it soon was gasping, but still it trilled the same ecstasy, and when it fell panting to earth it still trilled, and the distracted mother called to it to take breath or it would die, but it could not stop. "Thank you, thank you, thank you!" it sang to the sun till its little heart burst.

With filmy eyes Tommy searched himself for the little pocket-book in which he took notes of such sad thoughts as these, and in place of the book he found a glove wrapped in silk paper. He sat there with it in his hand, nodding his head over it so broken-heartedly you could not have believed that he had forgotten it for several days.

Death was still his subject; but it was no longer a bird he saw: it was a very noble young man, and his white, dead face stared at the sky from the bottom of a deep pool. I don't know how he got there, but a woman who would not admire him had something to do with it. No sun after rain had come into that tragic life. To the water that had ended it his white face seemed to be saying,

"Thank you, thank you, thank you." It wa
old story of a faithless woman. He had give
his heart, and she had played with it. For her
he had striven to be famous; for her alone ha
toiled through dreary years in London, the
her lap, in which he should one day place his boo
a poor, trivial little work, he knew (yet much
mired by the best critics). Never had his thou
wandered for one instant of that time to ano
woman; he had been as faithful in life a
death; and now she came to the edge of
pool and peered down at his staring eyes
laughed.

He had got thus far when a shout from C
brought him, dazed, to his feet. It had been
ceded by another cry, as the boy and the sapl
he was twisted round toppled into the river
gether, uprooted stones and clods pounding a
them and discolouring the pool into which the
rent rushes between rocks, to swirl frantically
fore it dives down a narrow channel and leaps i
another caldron.

There was no climbing down those precipit
rocks. Corp was shouting, gesticulating, impot
"How can you stand so still?" he roared.

For Tommy was standing quite still, like
not yet thoroughly awake. The boy's head
visible now and again as he was carried roun
the seething water; when he came to the o

down that channel he must infallibly go, and y second or two he was in a wider circle.

Tommy was awake now, and he could not stand and see a boy drown before his eyes. He ew that to attempt to save him was to face a ible danger, especially as he could not swim; he kicked off his boots. There was some gal- try in the man.

"You wouldna dare!" Corp cried, aghast.

Tommy hesitated for a moment, but he had undance of physical courage. He clenched his eth and jumped. But before he jumped he shed the glove into Corp's hand, saying, "Give r that, and tell her it never left my heart." He d not say who she was; he scarcely knew that he as saying it. It was his dream intruding on re- ity, as a wheel may revolve for a moment longer ter the spring breaks.

Corp saw him strike the water and disappear. He re along the bank as he had never run before, ntil he got to the water's edge below the Slugs, nd climbed and fought his way to the scene of e disaster. Before he reached it, however, we hould have had no hero had not the sapling, the ause of all this pother, made amends by barring he way down the narrow channel. Tommy was linging to it, and the boy to him, and, at some risk, Corp got them both ashore, where they lay gasping ke fish in a creel.

The boy was the first to rise to look for his ing-rod, and he was surprised to find no six-pou at the end of it. "She has broke the line aga he said; for he was sure then and ever afterw that a big one had pulled him in.

Corp slapped him for his ingratitude; but man who had saved this boy's life wanted thanks. "Off to your home with you, wherev is," he said to the boy, who obeyed silently; then to Corp: "He is a little fool, Corp, but such a fool as I am." He lay on his face, shi ing, not from cold, not from shock, but in a ror of himself. I think it may fairly be said t he had done a brave if foolhardy thing; it certainly to save the boy that he had jumped, he had given himself a moment's time in which draw back if he chose, which vastly enhances t merit of the deed. But sentimentality had be there also, and he was now shivering with a p sentiment of the length to which it might one d carry him.

They lit a fire among the rocks, at which I dried his clothes, and then they set out for hom Corp doing all the talking. "What a town the will be about this in Thrums!" was his text; an he was surprised when Tommy at last broke silen by saying passionately: "Never speak about this me again, Corp, as long as you live. Promise m that. Promise never to mention it to anyone.

› one to know what I did to-day, and no
ever know unless you tell; the boy can't
we are strangers to him."
thinks you are a Captain Ure, and that
xander Bett, his servant," said Corp. "I
im that for a divert."
n let him continue to think that."
ourse Corp promised. "And I'll go to
e afore I break my promise," he swore,
remembering one of the Jacobite oaths.
was puzzled. They would make so much
my if they knew. They would think him
r. Did he not want that?
" Tommy replied.
u used to like it; you used to like it most
"
ave changed."
, you have; but since when? Since you
making printed books?"
my did not say, but it was more recently
it. What he was surrendering no one could
eeded to be told less than he; the magni-
the sacrifice was what enabled him to make
was always at home among the superlatives;
he little things that bothered him. In his
fear of the ride that sentimentality might
ad him to, he craved for mastery over self;
w that his struggles with his Familiar usu-
ided in an embrace, and he had made a

passionate vow that it should be so no l
The best beginning of the new man was to
himself the glory that would be his if his
were advertised to the world. Even Grizel
never know of it — Grizel, whose admiratio
so dear to him. Thus he punished himself
again I think he deserves respect.

CHAPTER X

GAVINIA ON THE TRACK

CORP, you remember, had said that he would go to the stake rather than break his promise; and he meant it, too, though what the stake was, and why such a pother about going to it, he did not know. He was to learn now, however, for to the stake he had to go. This was because Gavinia, when folding up his clothes, found in one of the pockets a glove wrapped in silk paper.

Tommy had forgotten it until too late, for when he asked Corp for the glove it was already in Gavinia's possession, and she had declined to return it without an explanation. "You must tell her nothing," Tommy said sternly. He was uneasy, but relieved to find that Corp did not know whose glove it was, nor even why gentlemen carry a lady's glove in their pocket.

At first Gavinia was mildly curious only, but her husband's refusal to answer any questions roused her dander. She tried cajolery, fried his take of trout deliciously for him, and he sat down to them sniffing. *They were small,* and the remainder of their

brief career was in two parts. First he lifted them by the tail, then he laid down the tail. But not a word about the glove.

She tried tears. "Dinna greet, woman," he said in distress. "What would the bairn say if he kent I made you greet?"

Gavinia went on greeting, and the baby, waking up, promptly took her side.

"D—n the thing!" said Corp.

"Your ain bairn!"

"I meant the glove!" he roared.

It was curiosity only that troubled Gavinia. A reader of romance, as you may remember, she had encountered in the printed page a score of ladies who, on finding such parcels in their husbands' pockets, left their homes at once and for ever, and she had never doubted but that it was the only course to follow; such is the power of the writer of fiction. But when the case was her own she was merely curious; such are the limitations of the writer of fiction. That there was a woman in it she did not believe for a moment. This, of course, did not prevent her saying, with a sob, "Wha is the woman?"

With great earnestness Corp assured her that there was no woman. He even proved it: "Just listen to reason, Gavinia. If I was sich a black as *to be chief* wi' ony woman, and she wanted to gie *me a present*, weel, she might gie me a pair o'

gloves, but one glove, what use would one glove be to me? I tell you, if a woman had the impidence to gie me one glove, I would fling it in her face."

Nothing could have been clearer, and he had put it thus considerately because when a woman, even the shrewdest of them, is excited (any man knows this), one has to explain matters to her as simply and patiently as if she were a four-year-old; yet Gavinia affected to be unconvinced, and for several days she led Corp the life of a lodger in his own house.

"Hands off that poor innocent," she said when he approached the baby.

If he reproved her, she replied meekly, "What can you expect frae a woman that doesna wear gloves?"

To the baby she said: "He despises you, my bonny, because you hae no gloves. Ay, that's what maks him turn up his nose at you. But your mother is fond o' you, gloves or no gloves."

She told the baby the story of the glove daily, with many monstrous additions.

When Corp came home from his work, she said that a poor, love-lorn female had called with a boot for him, and a request that he should carry it in the pocket of his Sabbath breeks.

Worst of all, she listened to what he said in the night. Corp had a habit of talking in his sleep.

He was usually taking tickets at such times, and it had been her custom to stop him violently; but now she changed her tactics: she encouraged him. "I would be lying in my bed," he said to Tommy, "dreaming that a man had fallen into the Slugs, and instead o' trying to save him I cried out, 'Tickets there, all tickets ready,' and first he hands me a glove and neist he hands me a boot and havers o' that kind sich as onybody dreams. But in the middle o' my dream it comes ower me that I had better waken up to see what Gavinia's doing, and I open my een, and there she is, sitting up, hearkening avidly to my every word, and putting sly questions to me about the glove."

"What glove?" Tommy asked coldly.

"The glove in silk paper."

"I never heard of it," said Tommy.

Corp sighed. "No," he said loyally, "neither did I"; and he went back to the station and sat gloomily in a wagon. He got no help from Tommy, not even when rumours of the incident at the Slugs became noised abroad.

"A'body kens about the laddie now," he said.

"What laddie?" Tommy inquired.

"Him that fell into the Slugs."

"Ah, yes," Tommy said; "I have just been reading about it in the paper. A plucky fellow, *this Captain* Ure who saved him. I wonder who *he is.*"

"I wonder!" Corp said with a groan.

"There was an Alexander Bett with him, according to the papers," Tommy went on. "Do you know any Bett?"

"It's no a Thrums name," Corp replied thankfully. "I just made it up."

"What do you mean?" Tommy asked blankly.

Corp sighed, and went back again to the wagon. He was particularly truculent that evening when the six-o'clock train came in. "Tickets, there; look slippy wi' your tickets." His head bobbed up at the window of another compartment. "Tick——" he began, and then he ducked.

The compartment contained a boy looking as scared as if he had just had his face washed, and an old woman who was clutching a large linen bag as if expecting some scoundrel to appear through the floor and grip it. With her other hand she held on to the boy, and being unused to travel, they were both sitting very self-conscious, humble, and defiant, like persons in church who have forgotten to bring their Bible. The general effect, however, was lost on Corp, for whom it was enough that in one of them he recognized the boy of the Slugs. He thought he had seen the old lady before, also, but he could not give her a name. It was quite a relief to him to notice that *she was not wearing gloves.*

He heard her inquiring for one Alexander Bett, and being told that there was no such person in Thrums, "He's married on a woman of the name of Gavinia," said the old lady; and then they directed her to the house of the only Gavinia in the place. With dark forebodings Corp skulked after her. He remembered who she was now. She was the old woman with the nutcracker face on whom he had cried in, more than a year ago, to say that Gavinia was to have him. Her mud cottage had been near the Slugs. Yes, and this was the boy who had been supping porridge with her. Corp guessed rightly that the boy had remembered his unlucky visit. "I'm doomed!" Corp muttered to himself—pronouncing it in another way.

The woman, the boy, and the bag entered the house of Gavinia, and presently she came out with them. She was looking very important and terrible. They went straight to Ailie's cottage, and Corp was wondering why, when he suddenly remembered that Tommy was to be there at tea to-day.

CHAPTER XI

THE TEA-PARTY

t was quite a large tea-party, and was held in hat had been the school-room; nothing there now, wever, to recall an academic past, for even the ace against which a map of the world (Merca-r's projection) had once hung was gone the colour f the rest of the walls, and with it had faded away ie last relic of the Hanky School.

"It will not fade so quickly from my memory," ommy said, to please Mrs. McLean. His affec-ion for his old schoolmistress was as sincere as hers or him. I could tell you of scores of pretty things ie had done to give her pleasure since his return, ll carried out, too, with a delicacy which few men could rival, and never a woman; but they might make you like him, so we shall pass them by.

Ailie said, blushing, that she had taught him very little. "Everything I know," he replied, and then, with a courteous bow to the gentleman op-posite, "except what I learned from Mr. Cathro."

"Thank you," Cathro said shortly. Tommy had

behaved splendidly to him, and called him his preceptor, and yet the Dominie still itched to him with the tawse as of old. "And fine he kn I'm itching," he reflected, which made him itch more.

It should have been a most successful party, in the rehearsals between the hostess and her m Christina every conceivable difficulty had b ironed out. Ailie was wearing her black silk, without the Honiton lace, so that Miss Sop Innes need not become depressed; and she had h self taken the chair with the weak back. M Cathro, who, though a lean man, needed a gr deal of room at table, had been seated far aw from the spinet, to allow Christina to pass hi without climbing. Miss Sophia and Grizel ha the doctor between them, and there was also bachelor, but an older one, for Elspeth. Mr. Mc Lean, as stout and humoursome as of yore, ha solemnly promised his wife to be jocular, but no too jocular. Neither minister could complain, for i Mr. Dishart had been asked to say grace, M Gloag knew that he was to be called on for th benediction. Christina, obeying strict orders, glide round the table leisurely, as if she were not in th least excited, though she could be heard rushing along the passage like one who had entered for race. And, lastly, there was, as chief guest, th celebrated Thomas Sandys. It should have bee

a triumph of a tea-party, and yet it was not. Mrs. McLean could not tell why.

Grizel could have told why; her eyes told why every time they rested scornfully on Mr. Sandys. It was he, they said, who was spoiling the entertainment, and for the pitiful reason that the company were not making enough of him. He was the guest of the evening, but they were talking admiringly of another man, and so he sulked. Oh, how she scorned Tommy!

That other man was, of course, the unknown Captain Ure, gallant rescuer of boys, hero of all who admire brave actions except the jealous Sandys. Tommy had pooh-poohed him from the first, to Grizel's unutterable woe.

"Have you not one word of praise for such a splendid deed?" she had asked in despair.

"I see nothing splendid about it," he replied coldly.

"I advise you in your own interests not to talk in that way to others," she said. "Don't you see what they will say?"

"I can't help that," answered Tommy the just. "If they ask my opinion, I must give them the truth. I thought you were fond of the truth, Grizel."

To that she could only wring her hands and say nothing; but it had never struck her that the *truth could be so bitter.*

And now he was giving his opinion at Mrs. McLean's party, and they were all against him, except, in a measure, Elspeth's bachelor, who said cheerily, "We should all have done it if we had been in Captain Ure's place; I would have done it myself, Miss Elspeth, though not fond of the water." He addressed all single ladies by their Christian name with a Miss in front of it. This is the mark of the confirmed bachelor, and comes upon him at one-and-twenty.

"I could not have done it," Grizel replied decisively, though she was much the bravest person present, and he explained that he meant the men only. His name was James Bonthron; let us call him Mr. James.

"Men are so brave!" she responded, with her eyes on Tommy, and he received the stab in silence. Had the blood spouted from the wound, it would have been an additional gratification to him. Tommy was like those superb characters of romance who bare their breast to the enemy and say, "Strike!"

"Well, well," Mr. Cathro observed, "none of us was on the spot, and so we had no opportunity of showing our heroism. But you were near by, Mr. Sandys, and if you had fished up the water that day, instead of down, you might have been called upon. I wonder what you would have done?"

Yes, Tommy was exasperating to him still a

the long ago, and Cathro said this maliciously, feeling that he did a risky thing, so convinced as he by old experience that you were getting in the way of a road-machine when you opposed Thomas Sandys.

"I wonder," Tommy replied quietly.

The answer made a poor impression, and Cathro longed to go on. "But he was always most dangerous when he was quiet," he reflected uneasily, and checked himself in sheer funk.

Mr. Gloag came, as he thought, to Tommy's defence. "If Mr. Sandys questions," he said heavily, "whether courage would have been vouchsafed to him at that trying hour, it is right and fitting that he should admit it with Christian humility."

"Quite so, quite so," Mr. James agreed, with heartiness. He had begun to look solemn at the word "vouchsafed."

"For we are differently gifted," continued Mr. Gloag, now addressing his congregation. "To some is given courage, to some learning, to some grace. Each has his strong point," he ended abruptly, and tucked reverently into the jam, which seemed to be his.

"If he would not have risked his life to save the boy," Elspeth interposed hotly, "it would have been because he was thinking of me."

"I should like to believe that thought of you would have checked me," Tommy said.

Even Elspeth was troubled; but she must defend her dear brother. "He would have avoided it himself," she explained quickly. "He dislikes praise so much that he does not understand how sweet it is to smaller people."

This made Tommy wince. He was always distressed when timid Elspeth blurted out things of this sort in company, and not the least of his merits was that he usually forbore from chiding her for it afterwards, so reluctant was he to hurt her. In a world where there were no women except Elspeths, Tommy would have been a saint. He saw the doctor smiling now, and at once his annoyance with her changed to wrath against him for daring to smile at little Elspeth. She saw the smile, too, and blushed; but she was not angry: she knew that the people who smiled at her liked her, and that no one smiled so much at her as Dr. Gemmell.

The Dominie said fearfully: "I have no doubt that explains it, Miss Sandys. Even as a boy I remember your brother had a horror of vulgar applause."

"Now," he said to himself, "he will rise up and smite me." But no; Tommy replied quietly;

"I am afraid that was not my character, Mr. Cathro; but I hope I have changed since then, and that I could pull a boy out of the water without *wanting to be extolled* for it."

That he could say such things before her terrible to Grizel. It was perhaps conceivable he might pull the boy out of the water, as h ungenerously expressed it; but that he could ref from basking in the glory thereof, that, she kn was quite impossible. Her eyes begged him take back those shameful words, but he brav declined; not even to please Grizel could he p tend that what was not was. No more sentim for T. Sandys.

"The spirit has all gone out of him; what a afraid of?" reflected the Dominie, and he rose s denly to make a speech, tea-cup in hand. "Cat Cathro, you tattie-doolie, you are riding to dest tion," said a warning voice within him, but aga his better judgment he stifled it and began. begged to propose the health of Captain Ure. was sure they would all join with him cordiall drinking it, including Mr. Sandys, who unfo nately differed from them in his estimation of hero; that was only, however, as had been con sively shown, because he was a hero himself, an could make light of heroic deeds — with other hits at Mr. Sandys. But when all the others to drink the toast, Tommy remained seated. Dominie coughed.

"Perhaps Mr. Sandys means to reply," Gr suggested icily. And it was at this uncomfort moment that Christina appeared suddenly, an

state of suppressed excitement requested her mistress to speak with her behind the door. All the knowing ones were aware that something terrible must have happened in the kitchen. Miss Sophia thought it might be the china tea-pot. She smiled reassuringly to signify that, whatever it was, she would help Mrs. McLean through, and so did Mr. James. He was a perfect lady.

How dramatic it all was, as Ailie said frequently afterwards. She was back in a moment, with her hand on her heart. "Mr. Sandys," were her astounding words, "a lady wants to see you."

Tommy rose in surprise, as did several of the others.

"Was it really you?" Ailie cried. "She says it was you!"

"I don't understand, Mrs. McLean," he answered; "I have done nothing."

"But she says — and she is at the door!"

All eyes turned on the door so longingly that it opened under their pressure, and a boy who had been at the keyhole stumbled forward.

"That's him!" he announced, pointing a stern finger at Mr. Sandys.

"But he says he did not do it," Ailie said.

"He's a liar," said the boy.

His manner was that of the police, and it had come so sharply upon Tommy that he looked not unlike a detected criminal.

Most of them thought he was being accused of something vile, and the Dominie demanded, with a light heart, "Who is the woman?" while Mr. James had a pleasant feeling that the ladies should be requested to retire. But just then the woman came in, and she was much older than they had expected.

"That's him, granny," the boy said, still severely; "that's the man as saved my life at the Slugs." And then, when the truth was dawning on them all, and there were exclamations of wonder, a pretty scene suddenly presented itself, for the old lady, who had entered with the timidest courtesy, slipped down on her knees before Tommy and kissed his hand. That young rascal of a boy was all she had.

They were all moved by her simplicity, but none quite so much as Tommy. He gulped with genuine emotion, and saw her through a maze of beautiful thoughts that delayed all sense of triumph and even made him forget, for a little while, to wonder what Grizel was thinking of him now. As the old lady poured out her thanks tremblingly, he was excitedly planning her future. He was a poor man, but she was to be brought by him into Thrums to a little cottage overgrown with roses. No more hard work for these dear old hands. *She could* sell scones, perhaps. She should have *a cow.* *He* would send the boy to college and

a minister of him; she should yet hear randson preach in the church to which as a

t here the old lady somewhat imperilled icture by rising actively and dumping upon able the contents of the bag—a fowl for my.

e was as poor an old lady as ever put a half- y into the church plate on Sundays; but that should present a hen to the preserver of her dson, her mind had been made up from the nent she had reason to think she could find , and it was to be the finest hen in all the coun- round. She was an old lady of infinite spirit, daily, dragging the boy with her lest he again t a-fishing, she trudged to farms near and far xamine and feel their hens. She was a brittle lady who creaked as she walked, and cracked a whin-pod in the heat, but she did her dozen s or more a day, and passed all the fowls in ew, and could not be deceived by the craftiest armers' wives; and in the tail of the day she ame possessor, and did herself thraw the neck he stoutest and toughest hen that ever entered nen bag head foremost. By this time the boy given way in the legs, and hence the railway ney, its cost defrayed by admiring friends.

With careful handling he should get a week out her gift, she explained complacently, besides

two makes of broth; and she and the boy l
as if they would like dearly to sit op
Tommy during those seven days and watch
gorging.

If you look at the matter aright it was a l
somer present than many a tiara, but if you a
the same stuff as Mr. James it was only a
Mr. James tittered, and one or two others
ready to titter. It was a moment to try Tom
for there are doubtless heroes as gallant as he
do not know how to receive a present of a
Grizel, who had been holding back, moved a l
nearer. If he hurt that sweet old woman's
ings, she could never forgive him — never!

He heard the titter, and ridicule was terrib
him; but he also knew why Grizel had come cl
and what she wanted of him. Our Tomm
short, had emerged from his emotion, and
more knew what was what. It was not his
that he stood revealed a hero: the little
had done it; therefore let him do credit t
chosen of the little gods. The way he took
old lady's wrinkled hand, and bowed over it
thanked her, was an ode to manhood. Ever
was touched. Those who had been about to
wondered what on earth Mr. James had se
titter at, and Grizel almost clapped her hands
joy; she would have done it altogether hac
Tommy just then made the mistake of looki

or approval. She fell back, and, intoxicated himself, he thought it was because her heart too full for utterance. Tommy was now ndid, and described the affair at the Slugs with dorable modesty.

I assure you, it was a much smaller thing to than you imagine; it was all over in a few utes; I knew that in your good nature you ld make too much of it, and so—foolishly, I see now—I tried to keep it from you. As for name Captain Ure, it was an invention of that nourous dog, Corp."

nd so on, with the most considerate remarks n they insisted on shaking hands with him: beseech you, don't apologize to me; I see rly that the fault was entirely my own. Had een in your place, Mr. James, I should have aved precisely as you have done, and had you n at the Slugs you would have jumped in as I . Mr. Cathro, you pain me by holding back; ssure you I esteem my old Dominie more than r for the way in which you stuck up for Cap- n Ure, though you must see why I could not nk that gentleman's health."

And Mr. Cathro made the best of it, wringing mmy's hand effusively, while muttering, "Fool, nard stirk, gowk!" He was addressing him- and any other person who might be so pre- mptuous as to try to get the better of Thomas

Sandys. Cathro never tried it again. Tommy died that week his old Dominie have been very chary of what he said funeral.

They were in the garden now, the ge without their hats. "Have you made your with him?" Cathro asked Grizel, in a c voice. "He is a devil's buckie, and I advi to follow my example, Miss McQueen, and c late. I have always found him reasonable s as you bend the knee to him."

"I am not his enemy," replied Grizel, "and if he has done a noble thing I am pro him and will tell him so."

"I would tell him so," said the Do "whether he had done it or not."

"Do you mean," she asked indignantly, you think he did not do it?"

"No, no, no," he answered hurriedly; mercy's sake, don't tell him I think that." then, as Tommy was out of ear-shot: "Bu there is no necessity for my warning you ; standing in his way again, Miss McQueen, f are up in arms for him now."

"I admire brave men," she replied, "and one, is he not?"

"You 'll find him reasonable," said the Do drily.

But though it was thus that she de

my when others hinted doubts, she had not
aid she was proud of him to the man who
d most to hear it. For one brief moment
l had exulted on learning that he and Cap-
Ure were one, and then suddenly, to all the
ions now running within her, a voice seemed
y, "Halt!" and she fell to watching sharply
doer of noble deeds. Her eyes were not wist-
nor were they contemptuous, but had Tommy
less elated with himself he might have seen
they were puzzled and suspicious. To mis-
him in face of such evidence seemed half a
ie; she was indignant with herself even while
did it; but she could not help doing it, the
about Tommy was such a vital thing to
zel. She had known him so well, too well, up
minute ago, and this was not the man she had
own.

How unfair she was to Tommy while she
ched! When the old lady was on her knees
nking him, and every other lady was impressed
the feeling he showed, it seemed to Grizel that
was again in the arms of some such absurd sen-
ent as had mastered him in the Den. When
behaved so charmingly about the gift she was
ost sure he looked at her as he had looked in
old days before striding his legs and screaming
"Oh, am I not a wonder? I see by your
that you think *me a wonder*!" All the time

he was so considerately putting those wh misjudged him at their ease she believed he considerately that they might say to each "How considerate he is!" When she m Tommy in such comparative trifles as these to be wondered that she went into the garde tortured by a doubt about the essential? It nothing less than torture to her; when you cover what is in her mind, Tommy, you console yourself with that.

He discovered what was in her mind as Cathro left her. She felt shy, he thought, of ing to him after what had taken place, and, the generous intention of showing that she forgiven, he crossed good-naturedly to her.

"You were very severe, Grizel," he said, " don't let that distress you for a moment; it ser me right for not telling the truth at once."

She did not flinch. "Do we know the t now?" she asked, looking at him steadfastly. don't want to hurt you—you know that; but pl tell me, did you really do it? I mean, did you it in the way we have been led to suppose?"

It was a great shock to Tommy. He had forgotten his vows to change his nature, and she been sympathetic now he would have confe to her the real reason of his silence. He wa boyishly to tell her, though of course without r tion of the glove; but her words hardened

zel!" he cried reproachfully, and then in a voice: "Can you really think so badly of s that?"

I don't know what to think," she answered, ing her hands together. "I know you are clever."

e bowed slightly.

Did you?" she asked again. She was no er chiding herself for being over-careful; she t know the truth.

He was silent for a moment. Then, "Grizel," said, "I am about to pain you very much, but give me no option. I did do it precisely as have heard. And may God forgive you for ubting me," he added with a quiver, "as freely I do."

You will scarcely believe this, but a few min-es afterwards, he saw her from the garden going, not ome, but in the direction of Corp's house, obvi-usly to ask him whether Tommy had done it. ommy guessed her intention at once, and he ughed a bitter ho-ho-ha, and wiped her from his emory.

"Farewell, woman; I am done with you," are e terrible words you may conceive Tommy say-g. Next moment, however, he was hurriedly idding his hostess good-night, could not even ait for Elspeth, clapped his hat on his head, and

was off after Grizel. It had suddenly stru
that, now the rest of the story was out, Corp
tell her about the glove. Suppose Gavinia
it to her!

Sometimes he had kissed that glove p
ately, sometimes pressed his lips upon it wi
long tenderness that is less intoxicating but
you a better man; but now, for the first ti
asked himself bluntly why he had done
things, with the result that he was stridi
Corp's house. It was not only for his own
that he hurried; let us do him that justice. I
chiefly to save Grizel the pain of thinking th
whom she had been flouting loved her, as she
think if she heard the story of the glove. Th
could be nothing but pain to her he was boyi
certain, for assuredly this scornful girl wa
none of his love. And though she was scorn
she was still the dear companion of his boyh
Tommy was honestly anxious to save Grizel
pain of thinking that she had flouted a man w
loved her.

He took a different road from hers, but, to
annoyance, they met at Couthie's corner. I
would have passed her with a distant bow, but
would have none of that.

"You have followed me," said Grizel, with
hateful directness that was no part of Tomm
character.

"Grizel!"

"You followed me to see whether I was going to question Corp. You were afraid he would tell me what really happened. You wanted to see him first to tell him what to say."

"Really, Grizel ——"

"Is it not true?"

There are no questions so offensive to the artistic nature as those that demand a Yes or No for answer. "It is useless for me to say it is not true," he replied haughtily, "for you won't believe me."

"Say it and I shall believe you," said she.

Tommy tried standing on the other foot, but it was no help. "I presume I may have reasons for wanting to see Corp that you are unacquainted with," he said.

"Oh, I am sure of it!" replied Grizel, scornfully. She had been hoping until now, but there was no more hope left in her.

"May I ask what it is that my oldest friend accuses me of? Perhaps you don't even believe that I was Captain Ure?"

"I am no longer sure of it."

"How you read me, Grizel! I could hoodwink the others, but never you. I suppose it is because you have such an eye for the worst in anyone."

It was not the first time he had said something

of this kind to her; for he knew that she suspected herself of being too ready to find blemishes in others, to the neglect of their better qualities, and that this made her uneasy and also very sensitive to the charge. To-day, however, her own imperfections did not matter to her; she was as nothing to herself just now, and scarcely felt his insinuations.

"I think you were Captain Ure," she said slowly, "and I think you did it, but not as the boy imagines."

"You may be quite sure," he replied, "that I would not have done it had there been the least risk. That, I flatter myself, is how you reason it out."

"It does not explain," she said, "why you kept the matter secret."

"Thank you, Grizel! Well, at least I have not boasted of it."

"No, and that is what makes me ——" She paused.

"Go on," said he, "though I can guess what agreeable thing you were going to say."

But she said something else: "You may have noticed that I took the boy aside and questioned him privately."

"I little thought then, Grizel, that you suspected me of being an impostor."

She clenched her hands again; it was all so hard *to say, and* yet she must say it! "I did not. I

he believed his story. I was asking him ther you had planned his coming with it to . McLean's house at that dramatic moment."

"You actually thought me capable of that!"

"It makes me horrid to myself," she replied fully, "but if I thought you had done that I ld more readily believe the rest."

"Very well, Grizel," he said, "go on thinking worst of me; I would not deprive you of that asure if I could."

"Oh, cruel, cruel!" she could have replied; "you ow it is no pleasure; you know it is a great in." But she did not speak.

"I have already told you that the boy's story is ue," he said, "and now you ask me why I did ot shout it from the housetops myself. Perhaps t was for your sake, Grizel; perhaps it was to ave you the distress of knowing that in a momentary impulse I could so far forget myself as to act the part of a man."

She pressed her hands more tightly. "I may be wronging you," she answered; "I should love to think so; but—you have something you want to say to Corp before I see him."

"Not at all," Tommy said; "if you still want to see Corp, let us go together."

She hesitated, but she knew how clever he was. "I prefer to go alone," she replied. "Forgive me if I ask you to turn back."

"Don't go," he entreated her. "Grizel, I you my word of honour it is to save you acute that I want to see Corp first."

She smiled wanly at that, for though, as know, it was true, she misunderstood him. had to let her go on alone.

CHAPTER XII

IN WHICH A COMEDIAN CHALLENGES TRAGEDY TO BOWLS

When Grizel opened the door of Corp's house she found husband and wife at home, the baby in his father's arms; what is more, Gavinia was looking on smiling and saying, "You bonny litlin, you're windy to have him dandling you; and no wonder, for he's a father to be proud o'." Corp was accepting it all with a complacent smirk. Oh, agreeable change since last we were in this house! oh, happy picture of domestic bliss! oh—but no, these are not the words; what we meant to say was, "Gavinia, you limmer, so you have got the better of that man of yours at last."

How had she contrived it? We have seen her escorting the old lady to the Dovecot, Corp skulking behind. Our next peep at them shows Gavinia back at her house, Corp peering through the window and wondering whether he dare venture in. Gavinia was still bothered, for though she knew now the story of Tommy's heroism, there was no

glove in it, and it was the glove that madd her.

"No, I ken nothing about a glove," the lady had assured her.

"Not a sylup was said about a glove," m tained Christina, who had given her a hig coloured narrative of what took place in M McLean's parlour.

"And yet there's a glove in't as sure as the a quirk in't," Gavinia kept muttering to her She rose to have another look at the hoddy-pl in which she had concealed the glove from husband, and as she did so she caught sight of h at the window. He bobbed at once, but she h tened to the door to scarify him. The clock h given only two ticks when she was upon him, in that time she had completely changed her p of action. She welcomed him with smiles of pr Thus is the nimbleness of women's wit measu once and for all. They need two seconds if t are to do the thing comfortably.

"Never to have telled me, and you behaved grandly!" she cried, with adoring glances t were as a carpet on which he strode pompou into the house.

"It wasna me that did it; it was him," s Corp, and even then he feared that he had t too much. "I kenna what you're speaking abo he added loyally.

"Corp," she answered, "you needna be so canny, for the laddie is in the town, and Mr. Sandys has confessed all."

"The whole o't?"

"Every risson."

"About the glove, too?"

"Glove and all," said wicked Gavinia, and she continued to feast her eyes so admiringly on her deceived husband that he passed quickly from the gratified to the dictatorial.

"Let this be a lesson to you, woman," he said sternly; and Gavinia intimated with humility that she hoped to profit by it.

"Having got the glove in so solemn a way," he went on, "it would have been ill done of me to blab to you about it. Do you see that now, woman?"

She said it was as clear as day to her. "And a solemn way it was," she added, and then waited eagerly.

"My opinion," continued Corp, lowering his voice as if this were not matter for the child, "is that it's a love-token frae some London woman."

"Behear's!" cried Gavinia.

"Else what," he asked, "would make him hand it to me so solemn-like, and tell me to pass it on to her if he was drowned? I didna think o' that at the time, but it has come to me, Gavinia; it has come."

This was a mouthful indeed to Gavinia. So the glove was the property of Mr. Sandys, and he was in love with a London lady, and — no, this is too slow for Gavinia; she saw these things in passing, as one who jumps from the top of a house may have lightning glimpses through many windows on the way down. What she jumped to was the vital question, Who was the woman?

But she was too cunning to ask a leading question.

"Ay, she's his lady-love," she said, controlling herself, "but I forget her name. It was a very wise-like thing o' you to speir the woman's name."

"But I didna."

"You didna!"

"He was in the water in a klink."

Had Gavinia been in Corp's place she would have had the name out of Tommy, water or no water; but she did not tell her husband what she thought of him.

"Ay, of course," she said pleasantly. "It was after you helped him out that he telled you her name."

"Did he say he telled me her name?"

"He did."

"Well, then, I've fair forgot it."

Instead of boxing his ears she begged him to *reflect.* Result of reflection, that if the name had

en mentioned to Corp, which he doubted, it gan with M.

Was it Mary?

That was the name.

Or was it Martha?

It had a taste of Martha about it.

It was not Margaret?

It might have been Margaret.

Or Matilda?

It was fell like Matilda.

And so on. "But wi' a' your wheedling," Corp eminded his wife, bantering her from aloft, "you ouldna get a scraping out o' me till I was free to peak."

He thought it a good opportunity for showing Gavinia her place once and for all. "In small matters," he said, "I gie you your ain way, for though you may be wrang, thinks I to mysel', 'She's but a woman'; but in important things, Gavinia, if I humoured you I would spoil you, so let this be a telling to you that there's no diddling a determined man"; to which she replied by informing the baby that he had a father to be proud of.

A father to be proud of! They were the words heard by Grizel as she entered. She also saw Gavinia looking admiringly at her man, and in that doleful moment she thought she understood all. It was Corp who had done it, and Tommy had been the looker-on. He had sought to keep

the incident secret because, though he was in it
glory had been won by another (oh, how ba
and now, profiting by the boy's mistake, he
swaggering in that other's clothes (oh, baser st
Everything was revealed to her in a flash, and
stooped over the baby to hide a sudden tear.
did not want to hear any more.

The baby cried. Babies are aware that they c
do very much; but all of them who knew Gr
were almost contemptuously confident of th
power over her, and when this one saw (they
very sharp) that in his presence she could actu
think of something else, he was so hurt that he cr

Was she to be blamed for thinking so meanly
Tommy? You can blame her with that tear in h
eye if you choose; but I can think only of the gl
ness that came afterwards when she knew she h
been unjust to him. "Thank you, thank you, tha
you!" the bird sang to its Creator when the s
came out after rain, and it was Grizel's song as sh
listened to Corp's story of heroic Tommy. Ther
was no room in her exultant heart for remorse. I
would have shown littleness to be able to think o
herself at all when she could think so gloriously o
him. She was more than beautiful now; she wa
radiant; and it was because Tommy was the ma
she wanted him to be. As those who are cold hol
out their hands to the fire did she warm her hea
at what Corp had to tell, and the great joy that w

it within her made her radiant. Now the baby was in her lap, smiling back to her. He thought he had done it all. "So you thought you could resist me!" the baby crowed.

The glove had not been mentioned yet. "The sweetest thing of all to me," Grizel said, "is that he did not want me to hear the story from you, Corp, because he knew you would sing his praise so loudly."

"I'm thinking," said Gavinia, archly, "he had another reason for no wanting you to question Corp. Maybe he didna want you to ken about the London lady and her glove. Will you tell her, man, or will I?"

They told her together, and what had been conjectures were now put forward as facts. Tommy had certainly said a London lady, and as certainly he had given her name, but what it was Corp could not remember. But "Give her this and tell her it never left my heart"—he could swear to these words.

"And no words could be stronger," Gavinia said triumphantly. She produced the glove, and was about to take off its paper wrapping when Grizel stopped her.

"We have no right, Gavinia."

"I suppose we hinna, and I'm thinking the pocket it came out o' is feeling gey toom without it. *Will you take it* back to him?"

"It was very wrong of you to keep it." G
answered, "but I can't take it to him, for I see
that his reason for wanting me not to come
was to prevent my hearing about it. I am
glad I know. Corp must take it back."
When she saw it being crushed in Corp's
hand a pang for the helpless glove came over
She said: "After all, I do know about it,
don't pretend to him that I don't. I will give
him Corp," and she put the little package in
pocket with a brave smile.

Do you think the radiance had gone from
face now? Do you think the joy that had been
in her heart was dead? Oh, no, no! Grizel
never asked that Tommy should love her;
had asked only that he should be a fine m
She did not ask it for herself, only for him.
could not think of herself now, only of h
She did not think she loved him. She though
woman should not love any man until she kn
he wanted her to love him.

But if Tommy had wanted it she would h
been very glad. She knew, oh, she knew so w
that she could have helped him best. Many
noble woman has known it as she stood aside.

In the meantime Tommy had gone home
several states of mind — reckless, humble, se
mental, most practical, defiant, apprehensive.
one moment he was crying, "Now, Grizel, n

when it is too late, you will see what you have lost." At the next he quaked and implored the gods to help him out of his predicament. It was apprehension that, on the whole, played most of the tunes, for he was by no means sure that Grizel would not look upon the affair of the glove as an offer of his hand, and accept him. They would show her the glove, and she would, of course, know it to be her own. "Give her this and tell her it never left my heart." The words thumped within him now. How was Grizel to understand that he had meant nothing in particular by them?

I wonder if you misread him so utterly as to believe that he thought himself something of a prize? That is a vulgar way of looking at things of which our fastidious Tommy was incapable. As much as Grizel herself, he loathed the notion that women have a thirsty eye on man; when he saw them cheapening themselves before the sex that should hold them beyond price, he turned his head and would not let his mind dwell on the subject. He was a sort of gentleman, was Tommy. And he knew Grizel so well that had all the other women in the world been of this kind, it would not have persuaded him that there was a drop of such blood in her.

Then, if he feared that she was willing to be his, it must have been because he thought she *loved him? Not a bit of* it. As already stated,

he thought he had abundant reason to think
wise. It was remorse that he feared might bri
to his feet, the discovery that while she had
gibing at him he had been a heroic figure, suf
in silence, eating his heart for love of her.
doubtedly that was how Grizel must see t
now; he must seem to her to be an angel
than a mere man; and in sheer remorse she
cry, "I am yours!" Vain though Tommy
the picture gave him not a moment's ple
Alarm was what he felt.

Of course he was exaggerating Grizel's feel
She had too much self-respect and too little s
ment to be willing to marry any man because
had unintentionally wronged him. But this
how Tommy would have acted had he happe
to be a lady. Remorse, pity, no one was so g
at them as Tommy.

In his perturbation he was also good at maide
reserve. He felt strongly that the proper cou
for Grizel was not to refer to the glove — to tr
that incident as closed, unless he chose to reop
it. This was so obviously the correct procedu
that he seemed to see her adopting it like a sen
ble girl, and relief would have come to him h
he not remembered that Grizel usually took h
own way, and that it was seldom his way.

There were other ways of escape. For instanc
if she would only let him love her hopelessl

Oh, Grizel had but to tell him there was no hope, and then how finely he would behave! It would bring out all that was best in him. He saw himself passing through life as her very perfect knight. "Is there no hope for me?" He heard himself begging for hope, and he heard also her firm answer: "None!" How he had always admired the outspokenness of Grizel. Her "None!" was as splendidly decisive as of yore.

The conversation thus begun ran on in him, Tommy doing the speaking for both (though his lips never moved), and feeling the scene as vividly as if Grizel had really been present and Elspeth was not. Elspeth was sitting opposite him.

"At least let me wait, Grizel," he implored. "I don't care for how long; fix a time yourself, and I shall keep to it, and I promise never to speak one word of love to you until that time comes, and then if you bid me go I shall go. Give me something to live for. It binds you to nothing, and oh, it would make such a difference to me."

Then Grizel seemed to reply gently, but with the firmness he adored: "I know I cannot change, and it would be mistaken kindness to do as you suggest. No, I can give you no hope; but though I can never marry you, I will watch your future with warm regard, for you have to-day paid me the highest compliment a man can pay a woman."

(*How charmingly it* was all working out!)

Tommy bowed with dignity and touched hand with his lips. What is it they do ne Pym and even more expensive authors? Oh, "If at any time in your life, dear Grizel," he "you are in need of a friend, I hope you will first to me. It does not matter where your me reaches me, I will come to you without delay."

In his enthusiasm he saw the letter being livered to him in Central Africa, and immedi he wheeled round on his way to Thrums.

"There is one other little request I should to make of you," he said huskily. "Perhap ask too much, but it is this: may I keep y glove?"

She nodded her head; she was so touched she could scarcely trust herself to speak. "I you will soon get over this," she said at last; " other glove will take the place of mine; the ti will come when you will be glad that I said could not marry you."

"Grizel!" he cried in agony. He was so c ried away by his feelings that he said the wo aloud.

"Where?" asked Elspeth, looking at th window.

"Was it not she who passed just now?" he r plied promptly; and they were still discussing h mistake when Grizel did pass, but only to stop the door. She came in.

"My brother must have the second sight," declared Elspeth, gaily, "for he saw you coming before you came"; and she told what had happened, while Grizel looked happily at Tommy, and Tommy looked apprehensively at her. Grizel, he might have seen, was not wearing the tragic face of sacrifice; it was a face shining with gladness, a girl still too happy in his nobility to think remorsefully of her own misdeeds. To let him know that she was proud of him, that was what she had come for chiefly, and she was even glad that Elspeth was there to hear. It was an excuse to her to repeat Corp's story, and she told it with defiant looks at Tommy that said, "You are so modest, you want to stop me, but Elspeth will listen; it is nearly as sweet to Elspeth as it is to me, and I shall tell her every word, yes, and tell her a great deal of it twice."

It was not modesty which made Tommy so anxious that she should think less of him, but naturally it had that appearance. The most heroic fellows, I am told, can endure being extolled by pretty girls, but here seemed to be one who could not stand it.

"You need not think it is of you we are proud," she assured him light-heartedly; "it is really of ourselves. I am proud of being your friend. Tomorrow, when I hear the town ringing your praises, *I shall not say*, 'Yes, isn't he wonderful?'

I shall say, 'Talk of me; I, too, am an object of interest, for I am his friend.'"

"I have often been pointed out as his sister," said Elspeth, complacently.

"He did not choose his sister," replied Grizel, "but he chose his friends."

For a time he could suck no sweetness from it. She avoided the glove, he was sure, only because of Elspeth's presence. But anon there arrived to cheer him a fond hope that she had not heard of it, and as this became conviction, exit the Tommy who could not abide himself, and enter another who was highly charmed therewith. Tommy had a notion that certain whimsical little gods protected him in return for the sport he gave them, and he often kissed his hand to them when they came to the rescue. He would have liked to kiss it now, but gave a grateful glance instead to the corner in the ceiling where they sat chuckling at him. Grizel admired him at last. Tra, la, la! What a dear girl she was! Into his manner there crept a certain masterfulness, and instead of resisting it she beamed. Rum-ti-tum!

"If you want to spoil me," he said lazily, "you will bring me that footstool to rest my heroic feet upon."

She smiled and brought it. She even brought a cushion for his heroic head. Adoring little thing *that she* was, he must be good to her.

He was now looking forward eagerly to walking home with her. I can't tell you how delicious he meant to be. When she said she must go, he skipped upstairs for his hat, and wafted the gods their kiss. But it was always the unexpected that lay in wait for Tommy. He and she were no sooner out of the house than Grizel said, "I did not mention the glove, as I was not sure whether Elspeth knew of it."

He had turned stone-cold.

"Corp and Gavinia told me," she went on quietly, "before I had time to stop them. Of course I should have preferred not to know until I heard it from yourself."

Oh, how cold he was!

"But as I do know, I want to tell you that it makes me very happy."

They had stopped, for his legs would carry him no farther. "Get us out of this," every bit of him was crying, but not one word could Tommy say.

"I knew you would want to have it again," Grizel said brightly, producing the little parcel from her pocket, "so I brought it to you."

The frozen man took it and held it passively in his hand. His gods had flown away.

No, they were actually giving him another chance. What was this Grizel was saying? "I have not looked at it, for to take it out of its wrapping *would have been* profanation. Corp told me

London girl; but I know nothing m
ier name. You are not angry with
g of her, are you? Surely I may
r great happiness."

saved. The breath came back quic
He filled like a released ball. Had e
tter right to expand? Grizel, looki
nd pleased, had snatched him from
rely you will be nice to your preser
You will not be less grateful than
y?

not even yet have we plumed his v
we are to do it now. He could n
ved it of himself, but in the midst of
he grew bitter, and for no better reas
Grizel's face was bright.

glad," he said quite stiffly, "that it
nt news to you."

surprised her; but she was in a humbl
answered, without being offended: "I
news to me. How could you think
"

as sweet to her to think that he was
He who had been modestly flattering
ew moments ago that he must take care
oo far with this admiring little girl! O
oman, how difficult it is to know you,
ften, when we think we know you at last,
o begin again at the beginning! He

had never asked an enduring love from her; but surely, after all that had passed between them, he had a right to expect a little more than this. Was it maidenly to bring the glove and hand it to him without a tremor? If she could do no more, she might at least have turned a little pale when Corp told her of it, and then have walked quietly away. Next day she could have referred to it, with just the slightest break in her voice. But to come straight to him, looking delighted ——

"And, after all, I am entitled to know first," Grizel said, "for I am your oldest friend."

Friend! He could not help repeating the word with bitter emphasis. For her sake, as it seemed to him now, he had flung himself into the black waters of the Drumly. He had worn her glove upon his heart. It had been the world to him. And she could stand there and call herself his friend. The cup was full. Tommy nodded his head sorrowfully three times.

"So be it, Grizel," he said huskily; "so be it!" Sentiment could now carry him where it willed. The reins were broken.

"I don't understand."

Neither did he; but, "Why should you? What is it to you!" he cried wildly. "Better not to understand, for it might give you five minutes' pain, Grizel, a whole five minutes, and I *should be sorry to give* you that."

"What have I said? What have I done?"

"Nothing," he answered her. "nothing. I have been most exemplary; you have not e got any entertainment out of it. The thing m struck you as possible. It was too ludicrous!"

He laughed harshly at the package, which still in his hand. "Poor little glove," he s "and she did not even take the trouble to loo you. You might have looked at it. Grizel have looked at it a good deal. It meant so thing to me once upon a time when I was a fool. Take it and look at it before you flin away. It will make you laugh."

Now she knew, and her arms rocked con sively. Joy surged to her face, and she drov back. She looked at him steadfastly over the lar of her jacket; she looked long, as if tryin be suspicious of him for the last time. Ah, Gr you are saying good-bye to your best friend!

As she looked at him thus there was a mo fulness in her brave face that went to Tom heart and almost made a man of him. It w if he knew that she was doomed.

"Grizel," he cried, "don't look at me in way!" And he would have taken the package her, but she pressed it to her heart.

"Don't come with me," she said almost whisper, and went away.

He did not go back to the house. He

dered into the country, quite objectless when he was walking fastest, seeing nothing when he stood still and stared. Elation and dread were his companions. What elation whispered he could not yet believe; no, he could not believe it. While he listened he knew that he must be making up the words. By and by he found himself among the shadows of the Den. If he had loved Grizel he would have known that it was here she would come, to the sweet Den where he and she had played as children, the spot where she had loved him first. She had always loved him — always, always. He did not know what figure it was by the Cuttle Well until he was quite close to her. She was kissing the glove passionately, and on her eyes lay little wells of gladness.

CHAPTER XIII

LITTLE WELLS OF GLADNESS

It was dusk, and she had not seen him. silent Den he stood motionless within a few her, so amazed to find that Grizel really lov that for the moment self was blotted out mind. He remembered he was there onl he heard his heavy breathing, and then he check it that he might steal away undisc Divers emotions fought for the possession He was in the meeting of many waters, eac ble of whirling him where it chose, but tv imperious: the one the fierce joy of being the other an agonizing remorse. He wou have stolen away to think this tremendou over, but it tossed him forward. "Grizel," in husky whisper, "Grizel!"

She did not start; she was scarcely surp hear his voice: she had been talking to hi he had answered. Had he not been th would still have heard him answer. She co see him more clearly now than she had beer

him through those little wells of gladness. Her love for him was the whole of her. He came to her with the opening and the shutting of her eyes; he was the wind that bit her and the sun that nourished her; he was the lowliest object by the Cuttle Well, and he was the wings on which her thoughts soared to eternity. He could never leave her while her mortal frame endured.

When he whispered her name she turned her swimming eyes to him, and a strange birth had come into her face. Her eyes said so openly they were his, and her mouth said it was his, her whole being went out to him; in the radiance of her face could be read immortal designs: the maid kissing her farewell to innocence was there, and the reason why it must be, and the fate of the unborn; it was the first stirring for weal or woe of a movement that has no end on earth, but must roll on, growing lusty on beauty or dishonour till the crack of time. This birth which comes to every woman at that hour is God's gift to her in exchange for what He has taken away, and when He has given it He stands back and watches the man.

To this man she was a woman transformed. The new bloom upon her face entranced him. He knew what it meant. He was looking on the face of love at last, and it was love coming out smiling from its hiding-place because it thought it had *heard him call.* The artist in him who had done

this thing was entranced, as if he had written an immortal page.

But the man was appalled. He knew that he had reached the critical moment in her life and his, and that if he took one step farther forward he could never again draw back. It would be comparatively easy to draw back now. To remain a free man he had but to tell her the truth; and he had a passionate desire to remain free. He heard the voices of his little gods screaming to him to draw back. But it could be done only at her expense, and it seemed to him that to tell this noble girl, who was waiting for him, that he did not need her, would be to spill for ever the happiness with which she overflowed, and sap the pride that had been the marrow of her during her twenty years of life. Not thus would Grizel have argued in his place; but he could not change his nature, and it was Sentimental Tommy, in an agony of remorse for having brought dear Grizel to this pass, who had to decide her future and his in the time you may take to walk up a garden path. Either her mistake must be righted now or kept hidden from her for ever. He was a sentimentalist, but in that hard moment he was trying to be a man. He took her in his arms and kissed her reverently, knowing that after this there could be no drawing back. In that act he gave himself loyally to her as a husband. He knew he was not worthy of

her, but he was determined to try to be a little less unworthy; and as he drew her to him a slight quiver went through her, so that for a second she seemed to be holding back—for a second only, and the quiver was the rustle of wings on which some part of the Grizel we have known so long was taking flight from her. Then she pressed close to him passionately, as if she grudged that pause. I love her more than ever, far more; but she is never again quite the Grizel we have known.

He was not unhappy; in the near hereafter he might be as miserable as the damned—the little gods were waiting to catch him alone and terrify him; but for the time, having sacrificed himself, Tommy was aglow with the passion he had inspired. He so loved the thing he had created that in his exultation he mistook it for her. He believed all he was saying. He looked at her long and adoringly, not, as he thought, because he adored her, but because it was thus that look should answer look; he pressed her wet eyes reverently because thus it was written in his delicious part; his heart throbbed with hers that they might beat in time. He did not love, but he was the perfect lover; he was the artist trying in a mad moment to be as well as to do.

Love was their theme, but how to know what was said when between lovers it is only the loose change of conversation that gets into words? The

important matters cannot wait so slow a messenger; while the tongue is being charged with them, a look, a twitch of the mouth, a movement of a finger, transmits the story, and the words arrive, like Blücher, when the engagement is over.

With a sudden pretty gesture—ah, so like her mother's!—she held the glove to his lips. "It is sad because you have forgotten it."

"I have kissed it so often, Grizel, long before I thought I should ever kiss you!"

She pressed it to her innocent breast at that. And had he really done so? and which was the first time, and the second, and the third? Oh, dear glove, you know so much, and your partner lies at home in a drawer knowing nothing. Grizel felt sorry for the other glove. She whispered to Tommy as a terrible thing, "I think I love this glove even more than I love you—just a tiny bit more." She could not part with it. "It told me before you did," she explained, begging him to give it back to her.

"If you knew what it was to me in those unhappy days, Grizel!"

"I want it to tell me," she whispered.

And did he really love her? Yes, she knew he did but how could he?

"Oh, Grizel, how could I help it!"

He had to say it, for it is the best answer; but he *said it with* a sigh, for it sounded like a quotation.

But how could she love him? I think her reply disappointed him.

"Because you wanted me to," she said, with shining eyes. It is probably the commonest reason why women love, and perhaps it is the best; but his vanity was wounded—he had expected to hear that he was possessed of an irresistible power.

"Not until I wanted you to?"

"I think I always wanted you to want me to," she replied, naïvely; "but I would never have let myself love you," she continued very seriously, "until I was sure you loved me."

"You could have helped it, Grizel!" He drew a blank face.

"I did help it," she answered. "I was always fighting the desire to love you,—I can see that plainly,—and I always won. I thought God had made a sort of compact with me that I should always be the kind of woman I wanted to be if I resisted the desire to love you until you loved me."

"But you always had the desire!" he said eagerly.

"Always, but it never won. You see, even you did not know of it. You thought I did not even like you! That was why you wanted to prevent Corp's telling me about the glove, was it not? You thought it would pain me only! Do you remember what you said: 'It is to save you acute pain that I *want to see Corp* first'?"

All that seemed so long ago to Tommy now!

"How could you think it would be a pain to me!" she cried.

"You concealed your feelings so well, Grizel."

"Did I not?" she said joyously. "Oh, I wanted to be so careful, and I was careful. That is why I am so happy now." Her face was glowing. She was full of odd, delightful fancies to-night. She kissed her hand to the gloaming; no, not to the gloaming — to the little hunted, anxious girl she had been.

"She is looking at us," she said. "She is standing behind that tree looking at us. She wanted so much to grow into a dear, good woman that she often comes and looks at me eagerly. Sometimes her face is so fearful! I think she was a little alarmed when she heard you were coming back."

"She never liked me, Grizel."

"Hush!" said Grizel, in a low voice. "She always liked you; she always thought you a wonder. But she would be distressed if she heard me telling you. She thought it would not be safe for you to know. I must tell him now, dearest, darlingest," she suddenly called out boldly to the little self she had been so quaintly fond of because there was no other to love her. "I must tell him everything now, for you are no longer your own. You *are his.*"

"She has gone away rocking her arms," she said to Tommy.

"No," he replied. "I can hear her. She is singing because you are so happy."

"She never knew how to sing."

"She has learned suddenly. Everybody can sing who has anything to sing about. And do you know what she said about your dear wet eyes, Grizel? She said they were just sweet. And do you know why she left us so suddenly? She ran home gleefully to stitch and dust and beat carpets, and get baths ready, and look after the affairs of everybody, which she is sure must be going to rack and ruin because she has been away for half an hour!"

At his words there sparkled in her face the fond delight with which a woman assures herself that the beloved one knows her little weaknesses, for she does not truly love unless she thirsts to have him understand the whole of her, and to love her in spite of the foibles and for them. If he does not love you a little for the foibles, madam, God help you from the day of the wedding.

But though Grizel was pleased, she was not to be cajoled. She wandered with him through the Den, stopping at the Lair, and the Queen's Bower, and many other places where the little girl used to watch Tommy suspiciously; and she called, half merrily, *half plaintively*: "Are you there, you

foolish girl, and are you wringing your hands over me? I believe you are jealous because I love him best."

"We have loved each other so long, she and I," she said apologetically to Tommy. "Ah," she said impulsively, when he seemed to be hurt, "don't you see it is because she doubts you that I am so sorry for the poor thing!"

"Dearest, darlingest," she called to the child she had been, "don't think that you can come to me when he is away, and whisper things against him to me. Do you think I will listen to your croakings, you poor, wet-faced thing!"

"You child!" said Tommy.

"Do you think me a child because I blow kisses to her?"

"Do you like me to think you one?" he replied.

"I like you to call me child," she said, "but not to think me one."

"Then I shall think you one," said he, triumphantly. He was so perfect an instrument for love to play upon that he let it play on and on, and listened in a fever of delight. How could Grizel have doubted Tommy? The god of love himself would have sworn that there were a score of arrows in him. He wanted to tell Elspeth and the others at once that he and Grizel were engaged. I am glad to remember that it was he who urged this, and *Grizel who* insisted on its being deferred. He

even pretended to believe that Elspeth would exult in the news; but Grizel smiled at him for saying this to please her. She had never been a great friend of Elspeth's, they were so dissimilar; and she blamed herself for it now, and said she wanted to try to make Elspeth love her before they told her. Tommy begged her to let him tell his sister at once; but she remained obdurate, so anxious was she that her happiness, when revealed, should bring only happiness to others. There had not come to Grizel yet the longing to be recognized as his by the world. This love was so beautiful and precious to her that there was an added joy in sharing the dear secret with him alone; it was a live thing that might escape if she let anyone but him look between the fingers that held it.

The crowning glory of loving and being loved is that the pair make no real progress; however far they have advanced into the enchanted land during the day, they must start again from the frontier next morning. Last night they had dredged the lovers' lexicon for superlatives and not even blushed; to-day is that the heavens cracking or merely someone whispering "dear"? All this was very strange and wonderful to Grizel. She had never been so young in the days when she was a little girl.

"I can never be quite so happy again!" she had said, with a wistful smile, on the night of

nights; but early morn, the time of the day that loves maidens best, retold her the delicious secret as it kissed her on the eyes, and her first impulse was to hurry to Tommy. When joy or sorrow came to her now, her first impulse was to hurry with it to him.

Was he still the same, quite the same? She, whom love had made a child of, asked it fearfully, as if to gaze upon him openly just at first might be blinding; and he pretended not to understand "The same as what, Grizel?"

"Are you still — what I think you?"

"Ah, Grizel, not at all what you think me."

"But you do?"

"Coward! You are afraid to say the word. But I do!"

"You don't ask whether I do!"

"No."

"Why? Is it because you are so sure of me?" He nodded, and she said it was cruel of him.

"You don't mean that, Grizel."

"Don't I?" She was delighted that he knew it.

"No; you mean that you like me to be sure of it."

"But I want to be sure of it myself."

"You are. That was why you asked me if I loved you. Had you not been sure of it you *would not* have asked."

"*How* clever you are!" she said gleefully, and

caressed a button of his velvet coat. "But you don't know what that means! It does not mean that I love you — not merely that."

"No; it means that you are glad I know you so well. It is an ecstasy to you, is it not, to feel that I know you so well?"

"It is sweet," she said. She asked curiously: "What did you do last night, after you left me? I can't guess, though I daresay you can guess what I did."

"You put the glove under your pillow, Grizel." (She had got the precious glove.)

"However could you guess!"

"It has often lain under my own."

"Oh!" said Grizel, breathless.

"Could you not guess even that?"

"I wanted to be sure. Did it do anything strange when you had it there?"

"I used to hear its heart beating."

"Yes, exactly! But this is still more remarkable. I put it away at last in my sweetest drawer, and when I woke in the morning it was under my pillow again. You could never have guessed that."

"Easily. It often did the same thing with me."

"Story-teller! But what did you do when you went home?"

He could not have answered that exhaustively, *even if he would*, for his actions had been as con-

tradictory as his emotions. He had feared even while he exulted, and exulted when plunged deep in fears. There had been quite a procession of Tommies all through the night; one of them had been a very miserable man, and the only thing he had been sure of was that he must be true to Grizel. But in so far as he did answer he told the truth.

"I went for a stroll among the stars," he said. "I don't know when I got to bed. I have found a way of reaching the stars. I have to say only, 'Grizel loves me,' and I am there."

"Without me!"

"I took you with me."

"What did we see? What did we do?"

"You spoiled everything by thinking the stars were badly managed. You wanted to take the supreme control. They turned you out."

"And when we got back to earth?"

"Then I happened to catch sight of myself in a looking-glass, and I was scared. I did not see how you could possibly love me. A terror came over me that in the Den you must have mistaken me for someone else. It was a darkish night, you know."

"You are wanting me to say you are handsome."

"No, no; I am wanting you to say I am very, very handsome. Tell me you love me, Grizel, *because I* am beautiful."

haps," she replied, "I love you because
ook is beautiful."
n good-bye for ever," he said sternly.
uld not that please you?"
vould break my heart."
I thought all authors——"
is the commonest mistake in the world.
simple creatures, Grizel, and yearn to be
r our face alone."
I do love the book," she said, when they
more serious, "because it is part of you."
her that," he told her, "than that you
love me because I am part of it. But it is
ittle part of me, Grizel; only the best part.
mmy on tiptoes. The other part, the part
es not deserve your love, is what needs it

m so glad!" she said eagerly. "I want to
ou need me."
w I need you!"
s, I think you do—I am sure you do; and it
me so happy."
," he said, "now I know why Grizel loves
And perhaps he did know now.
loved to think that she was more to him
e new book, but was not always sure of it;
metimes this saddened her, and again she
l that it was right and fitting. She would
to him to say that this saddened her. She

would go just as impulsively to say that thought it right.

Her discoveries about herself were many.

"What is it to-day?" he would say, smi fondly at her. "I see it is something drea by your face."

"It is something that struck me suddenly w I was thinking of you, and I don't know whet to be glad or sorry."

"Then be glad, you child."

"It is this: I used to think a good deal of m self; the people here thought me haughty; th said I had a proud walk."

"You have it still," he assured her; the vitali in her as she moved was ever a delicious thing t him to look upon.

"Yes, I feel I have," she admitted, "but that i only because I am yours; and it used to b because I was nobody's!"

"Do you expect my face to fall at that?"

"No, but I thought so much of myself once, an now I am nobody at all. At first it distressed m and then I was glad, for it makes you everythi and me nothing. Yes, I am glad, but I am just little bit sorry that I should be so glad!"

"Poor Grizel!" said he.

"Poor Grizel!" she echoed. "You are n angry with me, are you, for being almost sorry f her? She used to be so different. 'Where is yo

independence, Grizel?' I say to her, and she shakes her sorrowful head. The little girl I used to be need not look for me any more; if we were to meet in the Den she would not know me now."

Ah, if only Tommy could have loved in this way! He would have done it if he could. If we could love by trying, no one would ever have been more loved than Grizel. "Am I to be condemned because I cannot?" he sometimes said to himself in terrible anguish; for though pretty thoughts came to him to say to her when she was with him, he suffered anguish for her when he was alone. He knew it was tragic that such love as hers should be given to him, but what more could he do than he was doing?

CHAPTER XIV

ELSPETH

EVER since the beginning of the book we have been neglecting Elspeth so pointedly that were she not the most forgiving creature we should be afraid to face her now. You are not angry with us, are you, Elspeth? We have been sitting with you, talking with you, thinking of you between the chapters, and the only reason why you have so seldom got into them is that our pen insisted on running after your fascinating brother.

(That is the way to get round her.)

Tommy, it need not be said, never neglected her. The mere fact of his having an affair of his own at present is a sure sign that she is comfortable, for, unless all were well with Elspeth, no venture could have lured him from her side. "Now I am ready for you," he said to the world when Elspeth had been, figuratively speaking, put to sleep; but until she was nicely tucked up the world had to wait. He was still as in his boyhood, when he had to see her with a good book in her hand before he *could set off* on deeds of darkness. If this was but

the story of a brother and sister, there were matter for it that would make the ladies want to kiss Tommy on the brow.

That Dr. Gemmell disliked or at least distrusted him, Tommy knew before their acquaintance was an hour old; yet that same evening he had said cordially to Elspeth:

"This young doctor has a strong face."

She was evidently glad that Tommy had noticed it. "Do you think him handsome?" she inquired.

"Decidedly so," he replied, very handsomely, for it is an indiscreet question to ask of a plain man.

There was nothing small about Tommy, was there? He spoke thus magnanimously because he had seen that the doctor liked Elspeth, and that she liked him for liking her. Elspeth never spoke to him of such things, but he was aware that an extra pleasure in life came to her when she was admired; it gave her a little of the self-confidence she so wofully lacked; the woman in her was stirred. Take such presents as these to Elspeth, and Tommy would let you cast stones at himself for the rest of the day, and shake your hand warmly on parting.

In London Elspeth had always known quickly, almost at the first clash of eyes, whether Tommy's friends were attracted by her, but she had not known sooner than he. Those acquaintanceships had seldom ripened; but perhaps this was because

though he and she avoided talking of them, he was all the time taking such terrifying care of her. She was always little Elspeth to him, for whom he had done everything since the beginning of her, a frail little female counterpart of himself that would never have dared to grow up had he not always been there to show her the way, like a stronger plant in the same pot. It was even pathetic to him that Elspeth should have to become a woman while he was a man, and he set to, undaunted, to help her in this matter also. To be admired of men is a woman's right, and he knew it gratified Elspeth; therefore he brought them in to admire her. But beyond profound respect they could not presume to go, he was watching them so vigilantly. He had done everything for her so far, and it was evident that he was now ready to do the love-making also, or at least to sift it before it reached her. Elspeth saw this, and perhaps it annoyed her once or twice, though on the whole she was deeply touched; and the young gentlemen saw it also: they saw that he would not leave them alone with her for a moment, and that behind his cordial manner sat a Tommy who had his eye on them.

Subjects suitable for conversation before Elspeth seemed in presence of this strict brother to be limited. You had just begun to tell her the plot of the new novel when T. Sandys fixed you with his gleaming orb. You were in the middle of the

rumour about Mrs. Golightly when he let the poker fall. If the newsboys were yelling the latest horror he quickly closed the window. He made all visitors self-conscious. If she was not in the room few of them dared to ask if she was quite well. They paled before expressing the hope that she would feel stronger to-morrow. Yet when Tommy went up to sit beside her, which was the moment the front door closed, he took care to mention, incidentally, that they had been inquiring after her. One of them ventured on her birthday to bring her flowers, but could not present them, Tommy looked so alarming. A still more daring spirit once went the length of addressing her by her Christian name. She did not start up haughtily (the most timid of women are a surprise at times), but the poker fell with a crash.

He knew Elspeth so well that he could tell exactly how these poor young men should approach her. As an artist as well as a brother, he frowned when they blundered. He would have liked to be the medium through which they talked, so that he could give looks and words their proper force. He had thought it all out so thoroughly for Elspeth's benefit that in an hour he could have drawn out a complete guide for her admirers.

"At the first meeting look at her wistfully when she does not see you. She will see you." It *might have been* Rule One.

Rule Two: "Don't talk so glibly." How often that was what the poker meant!

Being herself a timid creature, Elspeth showed best among the timid, because her sympathetic heart immediately desired to put them at their ease. The more glibly they could talk, the less, she knew, were they impressed by her. Even a little boorishness was more complimentary than chatter. Sometimes when she played on the piano which Tommy had hired for her, the visitor was so shy that he could not even mutter "Thank you" to his hat; yet she might play to him again, and not to the gallant who remarked briskly: "How very charming! What is that called?"

To talk disparagingly of other women is so common a way among men of penetrating into the favour of one that, of course, some tried it with Elspeth. Tommy could not excuse such blundering, for they were making her despise them. He got them out of the house, and then he and she had a long talk, not about them, but about men and women in general, from which she gathered once again that there was nobody like Tommy.

When they bade each other good-night, she would say to him: "I think you are the one perfect gentleman in the world."

Or he might say: "You expect so much of men, *Elspeth.*"

To which her reply: "You have taught me to

do it, and now I expect others to be like you." Sometimes she would even say: "When I see you so fond of me, and taking such care of me, I am ashamed. You think me so much better than I am. You consider me so pure and good, while I know that I am often mean, and even have wicked thoughts. It makes me ashamed, but so proud of you, for I see that you are judging me by yourself."

And then this Tommy would put the gas out softly and go to his own room, and, let us hope, blush a little.

One stripling had proposed to Elspeth, and on her agitatedly declining him, had flung out of the room in a pet. It spoiled all her after-thoughts on the subject, and so roused her brother's indignation with the fellow. If the great baby had only left all the arrangements to Tommy, he could so easily have made that final scene one which Elspeth would remember with gratification for the remainder of her days; for, of course, pride in the offer could not be great unless she retained her respect for the man who made it. From the tremulous proposal and the manly acceptance of his fate to his dignified exit ("Don't grieve for me, Miss Sandys; you never gave me the least encouragement, and to have loved you will always make me a better man"), even to a touching way of closing the door with one long, last, lingering look, Tommy *could have* fitted him like a tailor.

From all which it will be seen that our splendid brother thought exclusively of what was best for Elspeth, and was willing that the gentlemen, having served their purpose, should, if it pleased them, go hang. Also, though he thought out every other possible move for the suitor, it never struck him to compose a successful proposal, for the simple reason that he was quite certain Elspeth would have none of them. Their attentions pleased her; but exchange Tommy for one of them — never! He knew it from her confessions at all stages of her life; he had felt it from the days when he began to be father and mother to her as well as brother. In his heart he believed there was something of his own odd character in Elspeth which made her as incapable of loving as himself, and some of his devotion to her was due to this belief; for perhaps nothing touches us to the quick more than the feeling that another suffers under our own curse; certainly nothing draws two souls so close together in a lonely comradeship. But though Tommy had reflected about these things, he did not trouble Elspeth with his conclusions. He merely gave her to understand that he loved her and she loved him so much that neither of them had any love to give to another. It was very beautiful, Elspeth thought, and a little tragic.

"You are quite sure that you mean that," she might ask timidly, "and that you are not flinging *away your life* on me?"

"You are all I need," he answered cheerily, and he believed it. Or, if he was in another mood, he might reflect that perhaps he was abstaining from love for Elspeth's sake, and that made him cheery also.

And now David Gemmell was the man, and Tommy genially forgave him all else for liking Elspeth. He invited the doctor, who so obviously distrusted him, to drop in of an evening for a game at the dambrod (which they both abominated, but it was an easy excuse); he asked him confidentially to come in and see Aaron, who had been coughing last night; he put on all the airs of a hail-fellow-well-met, though they never became him, and sat awkwardly on his face. David always seemed eager to come, and tried to rise above his suspicions of Tommy, as Tommy saw, and failed, as Tommy saw again. Elspeth dosed the doctor with stories of her brother's lovely qualities, and Tommy, the forgiving, honestly pitied the poor man for having to listen to them. He knew that if all went well Gemmell would presently propose, and find that Elspeth (tearful at having to strike a blow) could not accept him; but he did not look forward maliciously to this as his revenge on the doctor; he was thinking merely of what was good for Elspeth.

There was no open talk about David between the brother and sister. Some day, Tommy pre-

sumed, she would announce that the doctor had asked her to marry him; and oh, how sorry she was; and oh, what a good man he was; and oh, Tommy knew she had never encouraged him; and oh, she could never leave Tommy! But until that day arrived they avoided talking directly about what brought Gemmell there. That he came to see Elspeth neither of them seemed to conceive as possible. Did Tommy chuckle when he saw David's eyes following her? No; solemn as a cat blinking at the fire; noticed nothing. The most worldly chaperon, the most loving mother, could not have done more for Elspeth. Yet it was not done to find her a husband, but quite the reverse, as we have seen. On reflection Tommy must smile at what he has been doing, but not while he is working the figures. The artist never smiles at himself until afterwards.

And now he not only wondered at times how Elspeth and David were getting on, but whether she noticed how he was getting on with Grizel; for in matters relating to Tommy Elspeth was almost as sharp as he in matters that related to her, and he knew it. When he proposed to Elspeth that they should ask Gemmell to go fishing with them on the morrow ("He has been overworked of late and it would do him good") he wanted to *add, in a careless voice,* "We might invite Grizel *also," but could not* his lips suddenly went dry.

when Elspeth said the words that were so cult to him, he wondered, "Did she say that use she knew I wished it?" But he decided she did not, for she was evidently looking for- l to to-morrow, and he knew she would be ddering if she thought her Tommy was slipping.

I am so glad it was she who asked me," Grizel l to him when he told her. "Don't you see t it means? It means that she wants to get out of the way! You are not everything to now as you used to be. Are you glad, glad?"

"If I could believe it!" Tommy said.

"What else could make her want to be alone th him?"

Nothing else could have made Grizel want to e alone with him, and she must always judge thers by herself. But Tommy knew that Elspeth as different, and that a girl with some of himself 1 her might want to be alone with a man who dmired her without wanting to marry him.

CHAPTER XV

BY PROSEN WATER

THAT day by the banks of Prosen Water wa
of Grizel's beautiful memories. All the
when she thought he loved her became bea
memories.

It was the time of reds and whites, for the
of the broom had passed, except at great he
and the wild roses were trooping in. Whe
broom is in flame there seems to be no colo
yellow; but when the wild roses come we re
ber that the broom was flaunting. It was not
a lady, for it insisted on being looked at;
these light-hearted things are too innocent to
that there is anyone to look. Grizel was
by the side of the stream, adorning her ha
tastically with roses red and white and som
were neither. They were those that cannot
whether they look best in white or red, a
waver for the whole of their little lives betwe
two colours; there are many of them, and it
pathetic thing about wild roses. She did n
much heed to her handiwork. What she w

herself was that in another minute he and ould be alone. Nothing else in the world red very much. Every bit of her was con- s of it as the supreme event. Her fingers ed it upon the flowers. It was in her eyes uch as in her heart. He went on casting his moving from stone to stone, dropping down ank, ascending it, as if the hooking of a trout something to him. Was he feeling to his ow that as soon as those other two figures ded the bend in the stream he and she would the world to themselves? Ah, of course he it, but was it quite as much to him as it was er?

Not quite so much," she said bravely to her- "I don't want it to be quite so much — but ly."

And now they were alone as no two can be ept those who love; for when the third person es them they have a universe to themselves, it is closed in by the heavens, and the air of it he consciousness of each other's presence. She motionless now — trembling, exulting. She ld no longer hear the talking of the water, but heard his step. He was coming slowly towards . She did not look up — she waited, and while waited time was annihilated.

He was coming to her to treat her as if she were nd child; that she, of all women, could permit

it was still delicious to him, and a marvel had let him do it yesterday, but perhaps she regained her independence in the night. A hesitated he became another person. In a of feeling he had a fierce desire to tell her the about himself. But he did not know what it He put aside his rod, and sat down very misera beside her.

"Grizel, I suppose I am a knave." His parted to say it, but no words came. She given him an adorable look that stopped t as if her dear hand had been placed upon mouth.

Was he a knave? He wanted honestl know. He had not tried to make her love Had he known in time he would even have wa her against it. He would never have said he l her had she not first, as she thought, found it to tell her the truth then would have been b He had made believe in order that she r remain happy. Was it even make-belief? suredly he did love her in his own way, in the way he was capable of. She was far more to than any other person except Elspeth. H lighted in her, and would have fought ti dropped rather than let any human being i her. All his feelings for her were pure. H prepared to marry her; but if she had not that mistake, oh, what a delight it would have

to him never to marry anyone! He felt keenly miserable.

"Grizel, I seem to be different from all other men. There seems to be some curse upon me that makes me unable to love as they do. I want to love you, dear one; you are the only woman I ever wanted to love; but apparently I can't. I have decided to go on with this thing because it seems best for you; but is it? I would tell you all and leave the decision to you, were it not that I fear you would think I wanted you to let me off."

It would have been an honest speech, and he might have said it had he begun at once, for it was in a passion to be out, so desirous was he that dear Grizel should not be deceived; but he tried its effect first upon himself, and as he went on the tragedy he saw mastered him. He forgot that she was there, except as a figure needed to complete the picture of the man who could not love. He saw himself a splendidly haggard creature with burning eyes standing aside while all the world rolled by in pursuit of the one thing needful. It was a river, and he must stand parched on the bank for ever and ever. Should he keep that sorrowful figure a man or turn it into a woman? He tried a woman. She was on the bank now, her arms outstretched to the flood. Ah! she would be so glad to drink, though she must drown.

Grizel saw how mournful he had become as he

gazed upon her. In his face she had been s
all the glories that can be given to m
Thoughts had come to her that drew her nea
her God. Her trust in him stretched to et
All that was given to her at that momer
thought was also given to him. She seem
know why, with love lighting up their souls t
other, he could yet grow mournful.

"Oh," she cried, with a movement that
passionate caress, "do you indeed love me so
as that? I never wanted you to love me q
much as that!"

It brought him back to himself, but wit
start. Those sudden returns to fact had cea
bewilder him; they were grown so commo
he passed between dreams and reality as th
tissue-paper.

"I did not mean," she said at last, in a t
"that I wanted you to love me less, but
almost sorry that you love me quite so muc

He dared say nothing, for he did not alto
understand.

"I have those fears, too, sometimes," sh
on; "I have had them when I was with yo
more often when I was alone. They come
suddenly, and I have such eager longings
to you and tell you of them, and ask you to
them away. But I never did it; I kept th
myself."

"You could keep something back from me, Grizel?"

"Forgive me," she implored; "I thought they would distress you, and I had such a desire to bring you nothing but happiness. To bear them by myself seemed to be helping you, and I was glad, I was proud, to feel myself of use to you even to that little extent. I did not know you had the same fears; I thought that perhaps they came only to women; have you had them before? Fears," she continued, so wistfully, "that it is too beautiful to end happily? Oh, have you heard a voice crying, 'It is too beautiful; it can never be'?"

He saw clearly now; he saw so clearly that he was torn with emotion. "It is more than I can bear!" he said hoarsely. Surely he loved her.

"Did you see me die?" she asked, in a whisper. "I have seen you die."

"Don't, Grizel!" he cried.

But she had to go on. "Tell me," she begged; "I have told you."

"No, no, never that," he answered her. "At the worst I have had only the feeling that you could never be mine."

She smiled at that. "I am yours," she said softly; "nothing can take away that — nothing, nothing. I say it to myself a hundred times a day, *it is so sweet.* Nothing can separate us but

death; I have thought of all the other po
things, and none of them is strong enough.
when I think of your dying, oh, when I t
of my being left without you!"

She rocked her arms in a frenzy, and called
dearest, darlingest. All the sweet names tha
been the child Grizel's and the old doctor's
Tommy's now. He soothed her, ah, sure
only a lover could soothe. She was his G
she was his beloved. No mortal could have
more impassioned than Tommy. He must
loved her. It could not have been merely
pathy, or an exquisite delight in being the m
the desire to make her happy again in the qu
way, or all three combined? Whatever it w
did not know; all he knew was that he felt
word he said, or seemed to feel it.

"It is a punishment to me," Grizel said, s
her teeth, "for loving you too much. I know
you too much. I think I love you more than

She felt him shudder.

"But if I feel it," she said, shuddering als
unable to deceive herself, "what difference
make by saying it? He must know it
whether I say it or not."

There was a tremendous difference to To
but not of a kind he could explain, and she
on; she must tell him everything now.

"I pray every night and morning; but t

nothing — everyone does it. I know I thank God sincerely; I thank Him again and again and again. Do you remember how, when I was a child, you used to be horrified because I prayed standing? I often say little prayers standing now; I am always thanking Him for giving me you. But all the time it is a bargain with Him. So long as you are well I love Him, but if you were to die I would never pray again. I have never said it in words until to-day, but He must know it, for it is behind all my prayers. If He does not know, there cannot be a God."

She was watching his face, half wofully, half stubbornly, as if, whatever might be the issue of those words, she had to say them. She saw how pained he was. To admit the possible non-existence of a God when you can so easily leave the subject alone was horrible to Tommy.

"I don't doubt Him," she continued. "I have believed in Him ever since the time when I was such a lonely child that I did not know His name. I shall always believe in Him so long as He does not take you from me. But if He does, then I shall not believe in Him any more. It may be wrong, but that is what I feel.

"It makes you care less for me!" she cried in anguish.

"No, no, dear."

"*I don't think it* makes God care less for me."

she said, very seriously. "I think He is pleased that I don't try to cheat Him."

Somehow Tommy felt uncomfortable at that.

"There are people," he said vaguely, like one who thought it best to mention no names, "who would be afraid to challenge God in that way."

"He would not be worth believing in," she answered, "if He could be revengeful. He is too strong, and too loving, and too pitiful for that." But she took hold of Tommy as if to protect him. Had they been in physical danger, her first impulse would have been to get in front of him to protect him. The noblest women probably always love in this way, and yet it is those who would hide behind them that men seem to love the best.

"I always feel — oh, I never can help feeling," she said, "that nothing could happen to you, that God Himself could not take you from me, while I had hold of you."

"Grizel!"

"I mean only that He could not have the heart," she said hastily. "No, I don't," she had to add. "I meant what you thought I meant. That is why I feel it would be so sweet to be married, so that I could be close to you every moment, and then no harm could come to you. I would keep such a grip of you, I should be such a part of you, that you could not die without my dying also.

"Oh, do you care less for me now?" she cried. "I can't see things as clearly as you do, dearest, darlingest. I have not a beautiful nature like yours. I am naturally rebellious. I have to struggle even to be as good as I am. There are evil things in my blood. You remember how we found out that. God knew it, too, and He is compassionate. I think He makes many pitying allowances for me. It is not wicked, is it, to think that?"

"You used to know me too well, Grizel, to speak of my beautiful nature," he said humbly.

"I did think you vain," she replied. "How odd to remember that!"

"But I was, and am."

"I love to hear you proving you are not," said she, beaming upon him. "Do you think," she asked, with a sudden change of manner to the childish, like one trying to coax a compliment out of him, "that I have improved at all during those last days? I think I am not quite such a horrid girl as I used to be; and if I am not, I owe it to you. I am so glad to owe it to you." She told him that she was trying to make herself a tiny bit more like him by studying his book. "It is not exactly the things you say of women that help me, for though they are lovely I am not sure that they are quite true. I almost hope they are not true, *for if they are, then* I am not even an average

woman." She buried her face in his coat. "You say women are naturally purer than men, but I don't know. Perhaps we are more cunning only. Perhaps it is not even a thing to wish; for if we were, it would mean that we are good because there is less evil in us to fight against. Dear, forgive me for saying that; it may be all wrong; but I think it is what nearly all women feel in their hearts, though they keep it locked up till they die. I don't even want you to believe me. You think otherwise of us, and it is so sweet of you that we try to be better than we are — to undeceive you would hurt so. It is not the book that makes me a better woman — it is the man I see behind it."

He was too much moved to be able to reply — too much humbled. He vowed to himself that, whether he could love or not, he would be a good husband to this dear woman.

"Ah, Grizel," he declared, by and by, "what a delicious book you are, and how I wish I had written you! With every word you say, something within me is shouting, 'Am I not a wonder!' I warned you it would be so as soon as I felt that I had done anything really big, and I have. I have somehow made you love me. Ladies and gentlemen," he exclaimed, addressing the river and the trees and the roses, "I have somehow made her *love me!* Am I not a wonder?"

Grizel clapped her hands gaily; she was merry

She could always be what Tommy wanted to be. "Ladies and gentlemen," she cried, w could I help it?"

David had been coming back for his fly-book, though he did not hear their words, he saw a t in Grizel's face that suddenly set him think- For the rest of the day he paid little attention Elspeth; some of his answers showed her that was not even listening to her.

CHAPTER XVI

"HOW COULD YOU HURT YOUR GRIZEL SO!"

To concentrate on Elspeth so that he might f out what was in her mind was, as we have se seldom necessary to Tommy; for he had learn her by heart long ago. Yet a time was now co when he had to concentrate, and even then he w doubtful of the result. So often he had put th mind of hers to rights that it was an open box him, or had been until he conceived the od notion that perhaps it contained a secret drawe This would have been resented by most brother but Tommy's chagrin was nothing compared to th exhilaration with which he perceived that he migh be about to discover something new about woman He was like the digger whose hand is on th point of closing on a diamond—a certain holine added.

What puzzled him was the state of affairs no existing between Elspeth and the doctor. A wee had elapsed since the fishing excursion, and Davi had not visited them. Too busy? Tommy kne that it is the busy people who can find tim

uld it be that David had proposed to her at the terside?

No, he could not read that in Elspeth's face. e knew that she would be in distress lest her fusal should darken the doctor's life for too long time; but yet (shake your fist at him, ladies, for misunderstanding you!) he expected also to note that sympathetic face a look of subdued triumph, and as it was not there, David could not ave proposed.

The fact of her not having told him about it at nce did not prove to Tommy that there had been o proposal. His feeling was that she would consider it too sacred a thing to tell even to him, ut that it would force its way out in a week or wo.

On the other hand, she could not have resisted dropping shyly such remarks as these: "I think Dr. Gemmell is a noble man," or, "How wonderfully good Dr. Gemmell is to the poor!"

Also she would sometimes have given Tommy a glance that said, "I wonder if you guess."

Had they quarrelled? Tommy smiled. If it was but a quarrel he was not merely appeased — he was pleased. Had he had the ordering of the affair, he would certainly have included a lovers' quarrel in it, and had it not been that he wanted to give her the pleasure of finding these things out for herself, *he would* have taken her aside and

addressed her thus: "No need to look tragic, Elspeth; for to a woman this must be really one of the most charming moments in the comedy. You feel that he would not have quarrelled had he had any real caring for you, and yet in your heart you know it is a proof that he has. To a woman, I who know assure you that nothing can be more delicious. Your feeling for him, as you and I well know, is but a sentiment of attraction because he loves you as you are unable to love him, and as you are so pained by this quarrel, consider how much more painful it must be to him. You think you have been slighted; that when a man has seemed to like you so much you have a right to be told so by him, that you may help him with your sympathy. Oh, Elspeth, you think yourself unhappy just now when you are really in the middle of one of the pleasantest bits of it! Love is a series of thrills, the one leading to the other, and, as your careful guardian, I would not have you miss one of them. You will come to the final bang quickly enough, and find it the finest thrill of all, but it is soon over. When you have had to tell him that you are not for him, there are left only the pleasures of memory, and the more of them there were, the more there will be to look back to. I beg you, Elspeth, not to hurry; loiter *rather*, smelling the flowers and plucking them, *for you* may never be this way again."

All these things he might have pointed out to Elspeth had he wanted her to look at the matter rationally, but he had no such wish. He wanted her to enjoy herself as the blessed do, without knowing why. No pity for the man, you see, but no ill will to him. David was having his thrills also, and though the last of them would seem a staggerer to him at the time, it would gradually become a sunny memory. The only tragedy is not to have known love. So long as you have the experiences, it does not greatly matter whether your suit was a failure or successful.

So Tommy decided, but he feared at the same time that there had been no quarrel — that David had simply drawn back.

How he saw through Elspeth's brave attempts to show that she had never for a moment thought of David's having any feeling for her save ordinary friendship — yes, they were brave, but not brave enough for Tommy. At times she would say something bitter about life (not about the doctor, for he was never mentioned), and it was painful to her brother to see gentle Elspeth grown cynical. He suffered even more when her manner indicated that she knew she was too poor a creature to be loved by any man. Tommy was in great woe about Elspeth at this time. He was thinking much more about her than about Grizel, *but do not blame him* unreservedly for that: the

two women who were his dears were pulling
different ways, and he could not accompany
He had made up his mind to be loyal to G
and so all his pity could go to Elspeth. On
day he had his talk with the doctor, therefo
had, as it were, put Grizel aside only because
was happy just now, and so had not Elspeth's
of him.

The doctor and he had met on the hill, wh
the few who look may see one of the fairest vi
in Scotland. Tommy was strolling up and do
and the few other persons on the hill were glanc
with good-humoured suspicion at him, as we
look at celebrated characters. Had he been hap
he would have known that they were watchi
him, and perhaps have put his hands behind h
back to give them more for their money, as th
saying is; but he was miserable. His one consol
tion was that the blow he must strike Elspet
when he told her of his engagement need not b
struck just yet. David could not have chosen
worse moment, therefore, for saying so blunt
what he said: "I hear you are to be married. I
so, I should like to congratulate you."

Tommy winced like one charged with op
cruelty to his sister — charged with it, too, by t
real criminal.

"It is not true?" David asked quietly, a
Tommy turned from him glaring. "I am sorr

oke of it, as it is not true," the doctor said after pause, the crow's-feet showing round his eyes as ways when he was in mental pain; and presently e went away, after giving Tommy a contemptu- s look. Did Tommy deserve that look? We ust remember that he had wanted to make the ngagement public at once; if he shrank from ad- itting it for the present, it was because of El- peth's plight. "Grizel, you might have given her little time to recover from this man's faithless- ess," was what his heart cried. He believed that Grizel had told David, and for the last time in his life he was angry with her. He strode down the hill savagely towards Caddam Wood, where he knew he should find her.

Soon he saw her. She was on one of the many tiny paths that lead the stranger into the middle of the wood and then leave him there maliciously or because they dare not venture any farther themselves. They could play no tricks on Grizel, however, for she knew and was fond of them all. Tommy had said that she loved them because they were such little paths, that they appealed to her like babies; and perhaps there was something in it.

She came up the path with the swing of one who was gleefully happy. Some of the Thrums people, you remember, said that Grizel strutted because she was so satisfied with herself, and if you

like an ugly word, we may say that she strutted to-day. It was her whole being giving utterance to the joy within her that love had brought. As Grizel came up the path on that bright afternoon, she could no more have helped strutting than the bud to open on the appointed day. She was obeying one of Nature's laws. I think I promised long ago to tell you of the day when Grizel would strut no more. Well, this is the day. Observe her strutting for the last time. It was very strange and touching to her to remember in the after years that she had once strutted, but it was still more strange and touching to Tommy.

She was like one overfilled with delight when she saw him. How could she know that he was to strike her?

He did not speak. She was not displeased. When anything so tremendous happened as the meeting of these two, how could they find words at once?

She bent and pressed her lips to his sleeve; but he drew away with a gesture that startled her.

"You are not angry?" she said, stopping.

"Yes," he replied doggedly.

"Not with me?" Her hand went to her heart. "With me!" A wounded animal could not have uttered a cry more pathetic. "Not with *me!*" She clutched his arm.

"*Have* I no cause to be angry?" he said.

She looked at him in bewilderment. Could this be he? Oh, could it be she?

"Cause? How could I give you cause?"

It seemed unanswerable to her. How could Grizel do anything that would give him the right to be angry with her? Oh, men, men! will you never understand how absolutely all of her a woman's love can be? If she gives you everything, how can she give you more? She is not another person; she is part of you. Does one finger of your hand plot against another?

He told her sullenly of his scene with the doctor.

"I am very sorry," she said; but her eyes were still searching for the reason why Tommy could be angry with her.

"You made me promise to tell no one," he said, "and I have kept my promise: but you ——"

The anguish that was Grizel's then! "You can't think that I told him!" she cried, and she held out her arms as if to remind him of who she was. "You can believe that of your Grizel?"

"I daresay you have not done it wittingly; but this man has guessed, and he could never have guessed it from look or word of mine."

"It must have been I!" she said slowly. "Tell me," she cried like a suppliant, "how have I done it?"

"Your manner, your face," he answered, "it *must have been that.* I don't blame you, Grizel,

but — yes, it must have been that, and it is hard on me."

He was in misery, and these words leaped out. They meant only that it was hard on him if Elspeth had to be told of his engagement in the hour of her dejection. He did not mean to hurt Grizel to the quick. However terrible the loss of his freedom might be to the man who could not love, he always intended to be true to her. But she gave the words a deeper meaning.

She stood so still she seemed to be pondering, and at last she said quietly, as if they had been discussing some problem outside themselves: "Yes, I think it must have been that." She looked long at him. "It is very hard on you," she said.

"I feel sure it was that," she went on; and now her figure was erect, and again it broke, and sometimes there was a noble scorn in her voice, but more often there was only pitiful humility. "I feel sure it was that, for I have often wondered how everybody did not know. I have broken my promise. I used always to be able to keep a promise. I had every other fault,—I was hard and proud and intolerant,— but I was true. I think I was vain of that, though I see now it was only something I could not help; from the moment when I had a difficulty in keeping a promise, I *ceased to* keep it. I love you so much that I *carry my* love in my face for all to read. They

cannot see me meet you without knowing the truth; they cannot hear me say your name but I betray myself; I show how I love you in every movement; I am full of you. How can anyone look at me and not see you? I should have been more careful — oh, I could have been so much more careful had I loved you a little less! It is very hard on you."

The note of satire had died out of her voice; her every look and gesture carried in it nothing but love for him; but all the unhappy dog could say was something about self-respect.

Her mouth opened as if for bitterness; but no sound came. "How much self-respect do you think is left for me after to-day?" she said mournfully at last; and then she quickly took a step nearer her dear one, as if to caress the spot where these words had struck him. But she stopped, and for a moment she was the Grizel of old. "Have no fear," she said, with a trembling, crooked smile; "there is only one thing to be done now, and I shall do it. All the blame is mine. You shall not be deprived of your self-respect."

He had not been asking for his freedom; but he heard it running to him now, and he knew that if he answered nothing he would be whistling it back for ever. A madness to be free at any cost swept over him. He let go his hold on self-respect, and clapped *his hand on* freedom.

He answered nothing, and the one thing for her to do was to go; and she did it. But it was only for a moment that she could be altogether the Grizel of old. She turned to take a long, last look at him; but the wofulness of herself was what she saw. She cried, with infinite pathos, "Oh, how could you hurt your Grizel so!"

He controlled himself and let her go. His freedom was fawning on him, licking his hands and face, and in that madness he actually let Grizel go. It was not until she was out of sight that he gave utterance to a harsh laugh. He knew what he was at that moment, as you and I shall never be able to know him, eavesdrop how we may.

He flung himself down in a blaeberry-bed, and lay there doggedly, his weak mouth tightly closed. A great silence reigned; no, not a great silence, for he continued to hear the cry: "Oh, how could you hurt your Grizel so!" She scarcely knew that she had said it; but to him who knew what she had been, and what he had changed her into, and for what alone she was to blame, there was an unconscious pathos in it that was terrible. It was the epitome of all that was Grizel, all that was adorable and all that was pitiful in her. It rang in his mind like a bell of doom. He believed its echo would not be quite gone from his ears when *he died.* If all the wise men in the world had met

to consider how Grizel could most effectively say farewell to Tommy, they could not have thought out a better sentence. However completely he had put himself emotionally in her place with this same object, he would have been inspired by nothing quite so good.

But they were love's dying words. He knew he could never again, though he tried, be to Grizel what he had been. The water was spilled on the ground. She had thought him all that was glorious in man — that was what her love had meant; and it was spilled. There was only one way in which he could wound her more cruelly than she was already hurt, and that was by daring to ask her to love him still. To imply that he thought her pride so broken, her independence, her maidenly modesty, all that make up the loveliness of a girl, so lost that by entreaties he could persuade her to forgive him, would destroy her altogether. It would reveal to her how low he thought her capable of falling.

I suppose we should all like to think that it would have been thus with Grizel, but our wishes are of small account. It was not many minutes since she left Tommy, to be his no more, his knife still in her heart; but she had not reached the end of the wood when all in front of her seemed a world of goblins, and a future without him not to be *faced. He might* beat her or scorn her, but not

for an hour could she exist without him. wrung her arms in woe; the horror of what she doing tore her in pieces; but not all this preve her turning back. It could not even make go slowly. She did not walk back; she stole b in little runs. She knew it was her destruct but her arms were outstretched to the spot wh she had left him.

He was no longer there, and he saw her betwe the firs before she could see him. As he realiz what her coming back meant, his frame shook wi pity for her. All the dignity had gone from h She looked as shamed as a dog stealing back aft it had been whipped. She knew she was shame He saw she knew it: the despairing rocking of h arms proved it; yet she was coming back to him i little runs.

Pity, chivalry, oh, surely love itself, lifted him to his feet, and all else passed out of him save an imperious desire to save her as much humiliation as he could — to give her back a few of those gar- ments of pride and self-respect that had fallen from her. At least she should not think that she had to come all the way to him. With a stifled sob, he rose and ran up the path towards her.

"Grizel! it is you! My beloved! how could you leave me! Oh, Grizel, my love, how could you misunderstand me so!"

: gave a glad cry. She sought feebly to hold
it arm's length, to look at him watchfully,
id him as in the old days; but the old days
gone. He strained her to him. Oh, surely
s love at last! He thanked God that he loved
it.

CHAPTER XVII

HOW TOMMY SAVED THE FLAG

He loved at last, but had no time to exult now, for he could not rejoice with Tommy w his dear one drooped in shame. Ah, so well understood that she believed she had done the pardonable thing in woman, and that while thought so she must remain a broken column. was a great task he saw before him — nothing l than to make her think that what she had do was not shameful, but exquisite; that she had n tarnished the flag of love, but glorified it. Artfu ness, you will see, was needed; but, remember, h was now using all his arts in behalf of the woma he loved.

"You were so long in coming back to m Grizel. The agony of it!"

"Did it seem long?" She spoke in a trem bling voice, hiding her face in him. She listene like one anxious to seize his answer as it left h heart.

"So long," he answered, "that it seemed to m we must be old when we met again. I saw

ure without you stretching before me to the ve, and I turned and ran from it."

"That is how I felt," she whispered.

"You!" Tommy cried, in excellent amaze-nt.

"What else could have made me come?"

"I thought it was pity that had brought you — ty for me, Grizel. I thought you had perhaps me back to be angry with me ——"

"How could I be!" she cried.

"How could you help it, rather?" said he. "I as cruel, Grizel; I spoke like a fool as well as ke a dastard. But it was only anxiety for Elspeth hat made me do it. Dear one, be angry with me s often as you choose, and whether I deserve it r not; but don't go away from me; never send me from you again. Anything but that."

It was how she had felt again, and her hold on him tightened with sudden joy. So well he knew what that grip meant! He did not tell her that he had not loved her fully until now. He would have liked to tell her how true love had been born in him as he saw her stealing back to him, but it was surely best for her not to know that any transformation had been needed. "I don't say that I love you more now than ever before," he said carefully, "but one thing I do know: that I never admired you quite so much."

She looked up in surprise.

"I mean your character," he said determinedly. "I have always known how strong and noble it was, but I never quite thought you could do anything so beautiful as this."

"Beautiful!" She could only echo the word.

"Many women, even of the best," he told her, "would have resorted to little feminine ways of humbling such a blunderer as I have been: they would have spurned him for weeks; made him come to them on his knees; perhaps have thought that his brutality of a moment outweighed all his love. When I saw you coming to meet me half-way — oh, Grizel, tell me that you were doing that?"

"Yes, yes, yes!" she answered eagerly, so that she might not detain him a moment.

"When I saw you I realized that you were willing to forgive me; that you were coming to say so; that no thought of lowering me first was in your mind; that yours was a love above the littleness of ordinary people: and the adorableness of it filled me with a glorious joy; I saw in that moment what woman in her highest development is capable of, and that the noblest is the most womanly."

She said "Womanly?" with a little cry. It had always been such a sweet word to her, and she thought it could never be hers again!

"*It* is by watching you," he replied, "that I *know* the meaning of the word. I thought I

knew long ago, but every day you give it a nobler meaning."

If she could have believed it! For a second or two she tried to believe it, and then she shook her head.

"How dear of you to think that of me!" she answered. She looked up at him with exquisite approval in her eyes. She had always felt that men should have high ideas about women.

"But it was not to save you pain that I came back," she said bravely. There was something pathetic in the way the truth had always to come out of her. "I did not think you wanted me to come back. I never expected you to be looking for me, and when I saw you doing it, my heart nearly stopped for gladness. I thought you were wearied of me, and would be annoyed when you saw me coming back. I said to myself, 'If I go back I shall be a disgrace to womanhood.' But I came; and now do you know what my heart is saying, and always will be saying? It is that pride and honour and self-respect are gone. And the terrible thing is that I don't seem to care; I, who used to value them so much, am willing to let them go if you don't send me away from you. Oh, if you can't love me any longer, let me still love you! That is what I came back to say."

"Grizel, Grizel!" he cried. It was she who was *wielding the knife* now.

"But it is true," she said.

"We could so easily pretend that i
That was not what he said, though it w
heart. He sat down, saying:

"This is a terrible blow, but better yo
tell it to me than leave me to find it ou
was determined to save the flag for Grizel
he had to try all the Tommy ways, one by

"Have I hurt you?" she asked anxiou
could not bear to hurt him for a moment.
did I say?"

"It amounts to this," he replied huskil
love me, but you wish you did not; that
it means."

He expected her to be appalled by this;
stood still, thinking it over. There was so
pitiful in a Grizel grown undecided.

"Do I wish I did not?" she said helple
don't know. Perhaps that is what I do wi
but what are wishes! I know now that th
matter at all."

"Yes, they matter," he assured her, in t
of one looking upon death. "If you n
want to love me, you will cease to do
enough." His manner changed to bitterne
don't be cast down, Grizel, for the day
deliverance is at hand."

But again she disappointed him, and as
must be saved at whatever cost, he said.

"It has come already. I see you no longer love me as you did." Her arms rose in anguish; but he went on ruthlessly: "You will never persuade me that you do; I shall never believe it again."

I suppose it was a pitiable thing about Grizel — it was something he had discovered weeks ago and marvelled over — that nothing distressed her so much as the implication that she could love him less. She knew she could not; but that he should think it possible was the strangest woe to her. It seemed to her to be love's only tragedy. We have seen how difficult it was for Grizel to cry. When she said "How could you hurt your Grizel so!" she had not cried, nor when she knew that if she went back to him her self-respect must remain behind. But a painful tear came to her eyes when he said that she loved him less. It almost unmanned him, but he proceeded, for her good:

"I daresay you still care for me a little, as the rank and file of people love. What right had I, of all people, to expect a love so rare and beautiful as yours to last? It had to burn out, like a great fire, as such love always does. The experience of the world has proved it."

"Oh!" she cried, and her body was rocking. If he did not stop, she would weep herself to death.

"Yes, it seems sad," Tommy continued; "but if ever man knew that it served him right, I know

it. And they maintain, the wiseacres who analyzed love, that there is much to be s favour of a calm affection. The glory has but the material comforts are greater, and i end ——"

She sank upon the ground. He was blee for her, was Tommy. He went on his k beside her, and it was terrible to him to feel every part of her was alive with anguish. called her many sweet names, and she listened them between her sobs; but still she sobbed. could bear it no longer; he cried, and called u God to smite him. She did not look up, but poor hands pulled him back. "You said I do love you the same!" she moaned.

"Grizel!" he answered, as if in sad reproof; was not I who said that — it was you. I put i words only what you have been telling me for last ten minutes."

"No, no," she cried. "Oh, how could I!"

He flung up his arms in despair. "Is this o pity for me, Grizel," he implored, looking into face as if to learn his fate, "or is it love indeed

"You know it is love — you know!"

"But what kind of love?" he demanc fiercely. "Is it the same love that it was? Qui tell me. I can't have less. If it is but a little l you will kill me."

The first gleam of sunshine swept across her f

(and oh, how he was looking for it!). "Do you want it to be the same — do you really want it? Oh, it is, it is!"

"And you would not cease to love me if you could?"

"No, no, no!" She would have come closer to him, but he held her back.

"One moment, Grizel," he said in a hard voice that filled her with apprehension. "There must be no second mistake. In saying that love, and love alone, brought you back, you are admitting, are you not, that you were talking wildly about loss of pride and honour? You did the loveliest thing you have ever done when you came back. If I were you, my character would be ruined from this hour — I should feel so proud of myself."

She smiled at that, and fondled his hand. "If you think so," she said, "all is well."

But he would not leave it thus. "You must think so also," he insisted; and when she still shook her head, "Then I am proud of your love no longer," said he, doggedly. "How proud of it I have been! A man cannot love a woman without reverencing her, without being touched to the quick a score of times a day by the revelations she gives of herself — revelations of such beauty and purity that he is abashed in her presence. The unspoken prayers he offers up to God at those times *he gives to her to* carry. And when such a one

returns his love, he is proud indeed. To me you are the embodiment of all that is fair in woman, and it is love that has made you so, that has taken away your little imperfections — love for me. Ah, Grizel, I was so proud to think that somehow I had done it; but even now, in the moment when your love has manifested itself most splendidly, you are ashamed of it, and what I respect and reverence you for most are changes that have come about against your will. If your love makes you sorrowful, how can I be proud of it? Henceforth it will be my greatest curse."

She started up, wringing her hands. It was something to have got her to her feet.

"Surely," he said, like one puzzled as well as pained by her obtuseness, "you see clearly that it must be so. True love, as I conceive it, must be something passing all knowledge, irresistible; something not to be resented for its power, but worshipped for it; something not to fight against, but to glory in. And such is your love; but you give the proof of it with shame, because your ideal of love is a humdrum sort of affection. That is all you would like to feel, Grizel, and because you feel something deeper and nobler you say you have lost your self-respect. I am the man who has taken it from you. Can I ever be proud of *your love* again?"

He paused, overcome with emotion. "What it

has been to me!" he cried. "I walked among my fellows as if I were a colossus. It inspired me at my work. I felt that there was nothing great I was not capable of, and all because Grizel loved me."

She stood trembling with delight at what he said, and with apprehension at what he seemed to threaten. His head being bent, he could not see her, and amid his grief he wondered a little what she was doing now.

"But you spoke"—she said it timidly, as if to refer to the matter at all was cruel of her—"you spoke as if I was disgracing you because I could not conceal my love. You said it was hard on you." She pressed her hands together. "Yes, that is what you said."

This was awkward for Tommy. "She believes I meant that," he cried hoarsely. "Grizel believes that of me! I have behaved since then as if that was what I meant, have I? I meant only that it would be hard on me if Elspeth learned of our love at the very moment when this man is treating her basely. I look as if I had meant something worse, do I? I know myself at last! Grizel has shown me what I am."

He covered his face with his hands. Strong man as he was, he could not conceal his agony.

"Don't!" she cried. "If I was wrong——"

"*If you were wrong!*"

"I was wrong! I know I was wrong. Somehow it was a mistake. I don't know how it arose. But you love me and you want me to love you still. That is all I know. I thought you did not, but you do. If you wanted me to come back ——"

"If I wanted it!"

"I know you wanted it now, and I am no longer ashamed to have come. I am glad I came, and if you can still be proud of my love and respect me ——"

"Oh, Grizel, if!"

"Then I have got back my pride and my self-respect again. I cannot reason about it, but they have come back again."

It was she who was trying to comfort him by this time, caressing his hair and his hands. But he would not be appeased at once; it was good for her to have something to do.

"You are sure you are happy again, Grizel? You are not pretending in order to please me?"

"So happy!"

"But your eyes are still wet."

"That is because I have hurt you so. Oh, how happy I should be if I could see you smile again!"

"How I would smile if I saw you looking happy!"

"*Then* smile at once, sir," she could say presently, "*for* see how happy I am looking." And a

she beamed on him once more he smiled as well as he was able to. Grizel loved him so much that she actually knew when that face of his was smiling, and soon she was saying gaily to his eyes: "Oh, silly eyes that won't sparkle, what is the use of you?" and she pressed her own upon them; and to his mouth she said: "Mouth that does not know how to laugh — poor, tragic mouth!" He let her do nearly all the talking. She sat there crooning over him as if he were her child.

And so the flag was saved. He begged her to let him tell their little world of his love for her, and especially was he eager to go straight with it to the doctor. But she would not have this. "David and Elspeth shall know in good time," she said, very nobly. "I am sure they are fond of each other, and they shall know of our happiness on the day when they tell us of their own." And until that great day came she was not to look upon herself as engaged to Tommy, and he must never kiss her again until they were engaged. I think it was a pleasure to her to insist on this. It was her punishment to herself for ever having doubted Tommy.

CHAPTER XVIII

THE GIRL SHE HAD BEEN

AS they sat amid the smell of rosin on that summer day, she told him, with a glance that said, "Now you will laugh at me," what had brought her into Caddam Wood.

"I came to rub something out."

He reflected. "A memory?"

"Yes."

"Of me?"

She nodded.

"An unhappy memory?"

"Not to me," she replied, leaning on him. "I have no memory of you I would rub out, no, not the unhappiest one, for it was you, and that makes it dear. All memories, however sad, of loved ones become sweet, don't they, when we get far enough away from them?"

"But to whom, then, is this memory painful, Grizel?"

Again she cast that glance at him. "To her," she whispered.

"'That *little girl*'!"

"Yes; the child I used to be. You see, never grew up, and so they are not distant me ries to her. I try to rub them out of her mind giving her prettier things to think of. I go to places where she was most unhappy, and tell sweet things about you. I am not morbid, am in thinking of her still as some one apart from m self? You know how it began, in the lonely d when I used to look at her in mamma's mirror, a pity her, and fancy that she was pitying me a entreating me to be careful. Always when I thi I see her now, she seems to be looking anxiou at me and saying, 'Oh, do be careful!' And t sweet things I tell her about you are meant show her how careful I have become. Are yo laughing at me for this? I sometimes laugh at myself."

"No, it is delicious," he answered her, speakin more lightly than he felt. "What a numskull you make, Grizel, of any man who presumes to write about women! I am at school again, and you are Miss Ailie teaching me the alphabet. But I thought you lost that serious little girl on the doleful day when she heard you say that you loved me best."

"She came back. She has no one but me."

"And she still warns you against me?"

Grizel laughed gleefully. "I am too clever for her," she said. "I do all the talking. I allow her

to listen only. And you must not blame her for distrusting you; I have said such things against you to her! Oh, the things I said! On the first day I saw you, for instance, after you came back to Thrums. It was in church. Do you remember?"

"I should like to know what you said to her about me that day."

"Would you?" Grizel asked merrily. "Well, let me see. She was not at church — she never went there, you remember; but of course she was curious to hear about you, and I had no sooner got home than she came to me and said, 'Was he there?' 'Yes,' I said. 'Is he much changed?' she asked. 'He has a beard,' I said. 'You know that is not what I really mean,' she said, and then I said, 'I don't think he is so much changed that it is impossible to recognize him again.'"

Tommy interrupted her: "Now what did you mean by that?"

"I meant that I thought you were a little annoyed to find the congregation looking at Gavinia's baby more than at you!"

"Grizel, you are a wretch, but perhaps you were right. Well, what more did the little inquisitor want to know?"

"She asked me if I felt any of my old fear of you, and I said No, and then she clapped her *hands with joy.* And she asked whether you

looked at me as if you were begging me to say I still thought you a wonder, and I said I thought you did ——"

"Grizel!"

"Oh, I told her ever so many dreadful things as soon as I found them out. I told her the whole story of your ankle, sir, for instance."

"On my word, Grizel, you seem to have omitted nothing!"

"Ah, but I did," she cried. "I never told her how much I wanted you to be admirable; I pretended that I despised you merely, and in reality I was wringing my hands with woe every time you did not behave like a god."

"They will be worn away, Grizel, if you go on doing that."

"I don't think so," she replied, "nor can she think so if she believes half of what I have told her about you since. She knows how you saved the boy's life. I told her that in the old Lair because she had some harsh memories of you there; and it was at the Cuttle Well that I told her about the glove."

"And where," asked Tommy, severely, "did you tell her that you had been mistaken in thinking me jealous of a baby and anxious to be considered a wonder?"

She hid her face for a moment, and then looked *up roguishly* into his. "I have not told her that

she replied. It was so audacious of her he took her by the ears.

If I were vain," Tommy said reflectively, "I ld certainly shake you now. You show a ful want of tact, Grizel, in implying that I am perfect. Nothing annoys men so much. We stand anything except that."

His merriness gladdened her. "They are only le things," she said, "and I have grown to love m. I know they are flaws; but I love them ause ——"

"Say because they are mine. You owe me it."

"No; but because they are weaknesses I don't ve. I have others, but not those, and it is sweet me to know that you are weak in some matters in ich I am strong. It makes me feel that I can of use to you."

"Are you insinuating that there are more of m?" Tommy demanded, sitting up.

"You are not very practical," she responded, nd I am."

"Go on."

"And you are — just a little — inclined to be nti——"

"Hush! I don't allow that word; but you ay say, if you choose, that I am sometimes car- ed away by a too generous impulse."

"And that it will be my part," said she, "to

seize you by the arm and hold you back. Oh, you will give me a great deal to do! That is one of the things I love you for. It was one of the things I loved my dear Dr. McQueen for." She looked up suddenly. "I have told him also about you."

"Lately, Grizel?"

"Yes, in my parlour. It was his parlour, you know, and I had kept nothing from him while he was alive; that is to say, he always knew what I was thinking of, and I like to fancy that he knows still. In the evenings he used to sit in the arm-chair by the fire, and I sat talking or knitting at his feet, and if I ceased to do anything except sit still, looking straight before me, he knew I was thinking the morbid thoughts that had troubled me in the old days at Double Dykes. Without knowing it I sometimes shuddered at those times, and he was distressed. It reminded him of my mamma."

"I understand," Tommy said hurriedly. He meant: "Let us avoid painful subjects."

"It is years," she went on, "since those thoughts have troubled me, and it was he who drove them away. He was so kind! He thought so much of my future that I still sit by his arm-chair and tell him what is happening to his Grizel. I don't speak aloud, of course; I scarcely say the words *to* myself even; and yet we seem to have long *talks* together. I told him I had given you his coat."

Well, I don't think he was pleased at tha
el. I have had a feeling for some time that
coat dislikes me. It scratched my hand the
time I put it on. My hand caught in the
k of the collar, you will say; but no, that is
what I think. In my opinion, the deed was
iciously done. McQueen always distrusted
you know, and I expect his coat was saying,
ands off my Grizel.'"

She took it as quite a jest. "He does not dis-
st you now," she said, smiling. "I have told
n what I think of you, and though he was sur-
sed at first, in the end his opinion was the same
mine."

"Ah, you saw to that, Grizel!"

"I had nothing to do with it. I merely told
n everything, and he had to agree with me.
ow could he doubt when he saw that you had
ade me so happy! Even mamma does not
ubt."

"You have told her! All this is rather eerie,
izel."

"You are not sorry, are you?" she asked, look-
g at him anxiously. "Dr. McQueen wanted
to forget her. He thought that would be
st for me. It was the only matter on which we
fered. I gave up speaking of her to him. You
the only person I have mentioned her to since
became a woman; but I often think of her I am

sure there was a time, before I was old enou
understand, when she was very fond of me.
her baby, and women can't help being fo
their babies, even though they should never
had them. I think she often hugged me tig

"Need we speak of this, Grizel?"

"For this once," she entreated. "You
remember that mamma often looked at m
hatred, and said I was the cause of all her
but sometimes in her last months she woul
me such sad looks that I trembled, and I fel
she was picturing me growing into the ki
woman she wished so much she had not b
herself, and that she longed to save me. T
why I have told her that a good man lov
She is so glad, my poor dear mamma, that
her again and again, and she loves to hea
much as I to tell it. What she loves to hea
is that you really do want to marry me. Sh
fond of hearing that because it is what my
would never say to her."

Tommy was so much moved that he cou
speak, but in his heart he gave thanks tha
Grizel said of him to her mamma was true

"It makes her so happy," Grizel said, "tha
I seem to see her now she looks as sweet an
as she must have been in the days when sh
an innocent girl. I think she can enter in
feelings more than any other person could e

Is that because she was my mother? She understands how I feel just as I can understand how in the end she was willing to be bad because he wanted it so much."

"No, no, Grizel," Tommy cried passionately, "you don't understand that!"

She rocked her arms. "Yes, I do," she said; "I do. I could never have cared for such a man; but I can understand how mamma yielded to him, and I have no feeling for her except pity, and I have told her so, and it is what she loves to hear her daughter tell her best of all."

They put the subject from them, and she told him what it was that she had come to rub out in Caddam. If you have read of Tommy's boyhood you may remember the day it ended with his departure for the farm, and that he and Elspeth walked through Caddam to the cart that was to take him from her, and how, to comfort her, he swore that he loved her with his whole heart, and Grizel not at all, and that Grizel was in the wood and heard. And how Elspeth had promised to wave to Tommy in the cart as long as it was visible, but broke down and went home sobbing, and how Grizel took her place and waved, pretending to be Elspeth, so that he might think she was bearing up bravely. Tommy had not known what Grizel did for him that day, and when he heard it now for the first time from her own lips

he realized afresh what a glorious girl she was a had always been.

"You may try to rub that memory out of li Grizel's head," he declared, looking very prou at her, "but you shall never rub it out of mine.

It was by his wish that they went together the spot where she had heard him say that loved Elspeth only—"if you can find it," Tom said, "after all these years"; and she smiled at mannish words — she had found it so often sir There was the very clump of whin.

And here was the boy to match. Oh, who striving could make himself a boy again as Tom could! I tell you he was always irresistible t What is genius? It is the power to be a again at will. When I think of him flinging the years and whistling childhood back, not himself only, but to all who heard, distributin among them gaily, imperiously calling on them dance, dance, for they are boys and girls a until they stop — when to recall him in those moods is to myself to grasp for a moment at dear dead days that were so much the best, I c not wonder that Grizel loved him. I am his sl myself; I see that all that was wrong with Tom was that he could not always be a boy.

"Hide there again, Grizel," he cried to her, li Tommy cried to her, Stroke the Jacobite, her c tain, cried to the Lady Griselda; and he disappea

and presently marched down the path with an imaginary Elspeth by his side. "I love you both, Elspeth," he was going to say, "and my love for the one does not make me love the other less"; but he glanced at Grizel, and she was leaning forward to catch his words as if this were no play, but life or death, and he knew what she longed to hear him say, and he said it: "I love you very much, Elspeth, but however much I love you, it would be idle to pretend that I don't love Grizel more."

A stifled cry of joy came from a clump of whin hard by, and they were man and woman again.

"Did you not know it, Grizel?"

"No, no; you never told me."

"I never dreamed it was necessary to tell you."

"Oh, if you knew how I have longed that it might be so, yes, and sometimes hated Elspeth because I feared it could not be! I have tried so hard to be content with second place. I have thought it all out, and said to myself it was natural that Elspeth should be first."

"My tragic love," he said, "I can see you arguing in that way, but I don't see you convincing yourself. My passionate Grizel is not the girl to accept second place from anyone. If I know anything of her, I know that."

To his surprise, she answered softly: "You are *wrong. I wonder* at it myself, but I had made up

my mind to be content with second place, be grateful for it."

"I could not have believed it!" he crie

"I could not have believed it myself," s

"Are you the Grizel ——" he began.

"No," she said, "I have changed a litt she looked pathetically at him.

"It stabs me," he said, "to see you so h

"I am humbler than I was," she a huskily, but she was looking at him w fondest love.

"Don't look at me so, Grizel," he in "I am unworthy of it. I am the man v made you so humble."

"Yes," she answered, and still she looked with the fondest love. A film came over h and she touched them softly with her handk

"Those eyes that but a little while a looking so coldly at you!" he said.

"Dear eyes!" said she.

"Though I were to strike you——" h raising his hand.

She took the hand in hers and kissed it.

"Has it come to this!" he said, and could not speak, she nodded. He fell u knees before her.

"I am glad you are a little sorry," she s am a little sorry myself."

CHAPTER XIX

OF THE CHANGE IN THOMAS

To find ways of making David propose to Elspeth, of making Elspeth willing to exchange her brother for David — they were heavy tasks, but Tommy yoked himself to them gallantly and tugged like an Arab steed in the plough. It should be almost as pleasant to us as to him to think that love was what made him do it, for he was sure he loved Grizel at last, and that the one longing of his heart was to marry her; the one marvel to him was that he had ever longed ardently for anything else. Well, as you know, she longed for it also, but she was firm in her resolve that until Elspeth was engaged Tommy should be a single man. She even made him promise not to kiss her again so long as their love had to be kept secret. "It will be so sweet to wait," she said bravely. As we shall see presently, his efforts to put Elspeth into the hands of David were apparently of no avail, but though this would have embittered many men, it drew only to the surface some of *Tommy's noblest* attributes; as he suffered

in silence he became gentler, more consider
acquired a new command over himself. T
quer self for her sake (this is in the "Lett
Young Man") is the highest tribute a m
pay to a woman; it is the only real gr
and Tommy had done it now. I could gi
a score of proofs. Let us take his treatm
Aaron Latta.

One day about this time Tommy found l
alone in the house with Aaron, and had h
the old Tommy he would have waited but
ment to let Aaron decide which of them
go elsewhere. It was thus that these two,
uncomfortable in each other's presence, co
to keep the peace. Now note the change.

"Aaron," said Tommy, in the hush th
fallen on that house since quiet Elspeth lef
have never thanked you in words for all th
have done for me and Elspeth."

"Dinna do it now, then," replied the
fidgeting.

"I must," Tommy said cheerily, "I must
he did, while Aaron scowled.

"It was never done for you," Aaron in
him, "nor for the father you are the marrow

"It was done for my mother," said T
reverently.

"I'm none so sure o't," Aaron rapped ou
think I brocht you twa here as bairns, that

nder of my shame should ever stand before
."

But Tommy shook his head, and sat down sym-
thetically beside the warper. "You loved her,
aron," he said simply. "It was an undying love
at made you adopt her orphan children." A
harming thought came to him. "When you
rought us here," he said, with some elation, "El-
peth used to cry at nights because our mother's
pirit did not come to us to comfort us, and I in-
ented boyish explanations to appease her. But
I have learned since why we did not see that
spirit; for though it hovered round this house, its
first thought was not for us, but for him who
succoured us."

He could have made it much better had he been
able to revise it, but surely it was touching, and
Aaron need not have said "Damn," which was
what he did say.

One knows how most men would have received
so harsh an answer to such gentle words, and we
can conceive how a very holy man, say a monk,
would have bowed to it. Even as the monk did
Tommy submit, or say rather with the meekness
of a nun.

"I wish I could help you in any way, Aaron,"
he said, with a sigh.

"You can," replied Aaron, promptly, "by taking
yourself *off to London*, and leaving Elspeth here

wi' me. I never made pretence that I wanted you, except because she wouldna come without you. Laddie and man, as weel you ken, you were aye a scunner to me."

"And yet," said Tommy, looking at him admiringly, "you fed and housed and educated us. Ah, Aaron, do you not see that your dislike gives me the more reason only to esteem you?" Carried away by desire to help the old man, he put his hand kindly on his shoulder. "You have never respected yourself," he said, "since the night you and my mother parted at the Cuttle Well, and my heart bleeds to think of it. Many a year ago, by your kindness to two forlorn children, you expiated that sin, and it is blotted out from your account. Forget it, Aaron, as every other person has forgotten it, and let the spirit of Jean Myles see you tranquil once again."

He patted Aaron affectionately; he seemed to be the older of the two.

"Tak' your hand off my shuther," Aaron cried fiercely.

Tommy removed his hand, but he continued to look yearningly at the warper. Another beautiful thought came to him.

"What are you looking so holy about?" asked Aaron, with misgivings.

"*Aaron*," cried Tommy, suddenly inspired, "you *are not* always the gloomy man you pass for being.

ave glorious moments still. You wake in
rning, and for a second of time you are in
day of your youth, and you and Jean Myles
walk out to-night. As you sit by this fire
nk you hear her hand on the latch of the
s you pass down the street you seem to see
ning towards you. It is for a moment only,
n you are a gray-haired man again, and she
en in her grave for many a year; but you
hat moment."

n rose, amazed and wrathful. "The de'il
u," he cried, "how did you find out that?"
aps Tommy's nose turned up rapturously in
or the best of us cannot command ourselves
her at great moments, but when he spoke he
dest again.

was sympathy that told me," he explained;
Aaron, if you will only believe me, it tells
that a little of the man you were still clings

Come out of the moroseness in which you
nveloped yourself so long. Think what a
would be to Elspeth."

s little she would care."

you want to hurt her, tell her so."

n no denying but what she's fell fond o' me."

en for her sake," Tommy pleaded.

the warper turned on him with baleful eyes.
ikes me," he said in a grating voice, "and
n as *nothing to her*; we are all as nothing to

her beside you. If there hadna been you hae become the father to her I craved to you had mesmerized her; she had eyes but you. I sent you to the herding, m break your power over her, and all she co o' was my cruelty in sindering you. Syn aff wi' her to London, stealing her frae m without her while she was growing frae woman, the years when maybe she could o' me what she willed. Magerful Tam mother frae me, and he lived again in y the dochter."

"You really think me masterful—me!" said, smiling.

"I suppose you never were!" Aarc ironically.

"Yes," Tommy admitted frankly, "I terful as a boy, ah, and even quite late we change!" he said musingly.

"How we dinna change!" retorte bitterly. He had learned the truer philo

"Man," he continued, looking Tom "there's times when I see mair o' your m your father in you. She was a wonder believe. The letters about her grandeu wrote to Thrums when she was starvin you couldna hae wrote them better. never managed to cheat hersel'. That's sail away frae her."

used to make believe, Aaron, as you say,"
ny replied sadly. "If you knew how I feel
lly of it now, perhaps even you would wish
felt it less.
ut we must each of us dree his own weird,"
oceeded, with wonderful sweetness, when
did not answer. "And so far, at least, as
h is concerned, surely I have done my duty.
the bringing up of her from the days when
is learning to speak."
ie got into the way o' letting you do every-
for her," the warper responded sourly. "You
ht for her, you acted for her, frae the first;
oomed her, and then filled her up wi'
l'."
ie always needed some one to lean on."
y, because you had maimed her. She grew
the notion that you were all the earth and
onder o' the world."
ould I help that?"
lelp it! Did you try? It was the one thing
ere sure o' yoursel'; it was the one thing you
ht worth anybody's learning. You stood be-
er crowing the whole day. I said the now I
d you would go and leave her wi' me: but
ldna dare to keep her; she's helpless without
if you took your arm awa frae her now, she
l tumble to the ground."
fear it is true, Aaron," Tommy said, with bent

head. "Whether she is so by nature, o
I have made her so, I cannot tell, but I
what you say is true."

"It's true," said Aaron, "and yours i
There's no life for her now except what
she canna see beyond you. Gò on thinkii
a wonder if you like, but mind this: if y
cast her off frae you now, she would d
amputated hand."

To Tommy it was like listening to
Ah, Aaron, even you could not withhold
did you know how this man is being pun
for having made Elspeth so dependent
Some such thought passed through Tom
but he was too brave to appeal for pity.
is so," he said firmly, "I take the respons
it. But I began this talk, Aaron, not t
my troubles on you, but hoping to ligh
If I could see you smile, Aaron ——"

"Drop it!" cried the warper; and th
closer to him: "You would hae seen me
and heard me laugh, gin you had been l
Mrs. McLean came yont to read your bo
She fair insistit on reading the terrible no
me, and she grat they were so sublime; bu
limer they were, the mair I laughed, for I
Tommy, my man, I ken you."

He spoke with much vehemence, and
our hero was not perfect. He withdrew

the other room. I think it was the use of the word Tommy that enraged him.

But in a very few minutes he scorned himself, and was possessed by a pensive wonder that one so tragically fated as he could resent an old man's gibe. Aaron misunderstood him. Was that any reason why he should not feel sorry for Aaron? He crossed the hallan to the kitchen door, and stopped there, overcome with pity. The warper was still crouching by the fire, but his head rested on his chest; he was a weary, desolate figure, and at the other side of the hearth stood an empty chair. The picture was the epitome of his life, or so it seemed to the sympathetic soul at the door, who saw him passing from youth to old age, staring at the chair that must always be empty. At the same moment Tommy saw his own future, and in it, too, an empty chair. Yet, hard as was his own case, at least he knew that he was loved; if her chair must be empty, the fault was as little hers as his, while Aaron ——

A noble compassion drew him forward, and he put his hand determinedly on the dear old man's shoulder.

"Aaron," he said, in a tremble of pity, "I know what is the real sorrow of your life, and I rejoice because I can put an end to it. You think that Jean Myles never cared for you; but you are strangely *wrong*. *I was with* my mother to the last, Aaron,

and I can tell you, she asked me with he breath to say to you that she loved you time."

Aaron tried to rise, but was pushed b his chair. "Love cannot die," cried Tom umphantly, like the fairy in the pantomime is always young——"

He stopped in mid-career at sight of disappointing face. "Are you done?" th inquired. "When you and me are alan house there's no room for the both o' us I'll never hae it said that I made Jean bairn munt, I'll go out mysel'."

And out he went, and sat on the dyk speth came home. It did not turn Tomm He nodded kindly to Aaron from the wi token of forgiveness, and next day he spen able hour in making a cushion for the o chair. "He must be left with the impres you made it," Tommy explained to Elsp he would not take it from me."

"Oh, Tommy, how good you are!"

"I am far from it, Elspeth."

"There is a serenity about you no she said, "that I don't seem to have before," and indeed this was true; it serenity that comes to those who, having tal wound, can no more be troubled by pricks.

"There has been nothing to cause it, has there?" Elspeth asked timidly.

"Only the feeling that I have much to be grateful for," he replied. "I have you, Elspeth."

"And I have you," she said, "and I want no more. I could never care for anyone as I care for you, Tommy."

She was speaking unselfishly; she meant to imply delicately that the doctor's defection need not make Tommy think her unhappy. "Are you glad?" she asked.

He said Yes bravely. Elspeth, he was determined, should never have the distress of knowing that for her sake he was giving up the one great joy which life contains. He was a grander character than most. Men have often in the world's history made a splendid sacrifice for women, but if you turn up the annals you will find that the woman nearly always knew of it.

He told Grizel what Aaron had said and what Elspeth had said. He could keep nothing from her now; he was done with the world of make-believe for ever. And it seemed wicked of him to hope, he declared, or to let her hope. "I ought to give you up, Grizel," he said, with a groan.

"I won't let you," she replied adorably.

"Gemmell has not come near us for a week. I *ask him in, but he* avoids the house."

"I don't understand it," Grizel had t
"but I think he is fond of her, I do indee

"Even if that were so, I fear she woul
cept him. I know Elspeth so well that I
deceiving you if I say there is any hope."

"Nevertheless you must say it," she
brightly; "you must say it and leave me
it. And I do think it. I believe that
despite her timidity and her dependenc
is like other girls at heart, and not mor
to win.

"And even if it all comes to noth
told him, a little faintly, "I shall no
happy. You don't really know me if y
I should love to be married so — so m
that."

"It is you, Grizel," he replied, "who
that it is myself I am pitying. It is I
to be married as much as all that."

Her eyes shone with a soft light, for
it was what she wanted him to say. T
seemed to have changed places. Tha
could love each other, and there the
been his fond philosophy and her tormen
it was she who argued for it and Ton
shook his head.

"They can be very, very happy."

"No," he said.

"But one of them is."

"Not the other," he insisted; and of course it was again what she wanted him to say.

And he was not always despairing. He tried hard to find a way of bringing David to Elspeth's feet, and once, at least, the apparently reluctant suitor almost succumbed. Tommy had met him near Aaron's house, and invited him to come in and hear Elspeth singing. "I did not know she sang," David said, hesitating.

"She is so shy about it," Tommy replied lightly, "that we can hear her by stealth only. Aaron and I listen at the door. Come and listen at the door."

And David had yielded and listened at the door, and afterwards gone in and remained like one who could not tear himself away. What was more, he and Elspeth had touched upon the subject of love in their conversation, Tommy sitting at the window so engrossed in a letter to Pym that he seemed to hear nothing, though he could repeat everything afterwards to Grizel.

Elspeth had said, in her shrinking way, that if she were a man she could love only a woman who was strong and courageous and helpful — such a woman as Grizel, she had said.

"And yet," David replied, "women have been loved who had none of those qualities."

"In spite of the want of them?" Elspeth asked.

"*Perhaps because of* it," said he.

"They are noble qualities," Elspeth ma
a little sadly, and he assented. "And one
at least, is essential," she said. "A woma
right to be loved who is not helpful."

"She is helpful to the man who lo
David replied.

"He would have to do for her," Elsp
"the very things she should be doing for

"He may want very much to do th
David.

"Then it is her weakness that appeal
Is not that loving her for the wrong thing

"It may be the right thing," David
"for him."

"And at that point," Tommy said, boy
Grizel, "I ceased to hear them, I was so
felt that everything was coming right.
not give another thought to their future,
busy mapping out my own. I heard a
ing. Do you know what it was? It
house going up — your house and mi
home, Grizel! It was not here, nor in
It was near the Thames. I wanted it to
the bank, but you said No, you were
floods. I wanted to superintend the buil
you conducted me contemptuously to
You intimated that I did not know how to
that no one knew except yourself. You i
the architect, and bullied the workmen, a

for more store-closets. Grizel, I saw the house go up; I saw you the adoration and terror of your servants; I heard you singing from room to room."

He was touched by this; all beautiful thoughts touched him.

But as a rule, though Tommy tried to be brave for her sake, it was usually she who was the comforter now, and he the comforted, and this was the arrangement that suited Grizel best. Her one thought need no longer be that she loved him too much, but how much he loved her. It was not her self-respect that must be humoured back, but his. If hers lagged, what did it matter? What are her own troubles to a woman when there is something to do for the man she loves?

"You are too anxious about the future," she said to him, if he had grown gloomy again. "Can we not be happy in the present, and leave the future to take care of itself?" How strange to know that it was Grizel who said this to Tommy, and not Tommy who said it to Grizel!

She delighted in playing the mother to him "Now you must go back to your desk," she would say masterfully. "You have three hours' work to do to-night yet."

"It can wait. Let me stay a little longer with you, Grizel," he answered humbly. Ha! it was Tommy *who was humble* now. Not so long ago

he would not have allowed his work to anyone, and Grizel knew it, and exulted.

"To work, sir," she ordered. "And y put on your old coat before you sit down and pull up your cuffs so that they don't s the desk. Also, you must not think t about me."

She tried to look businesslike, but sl scarce resist rocking her arms with delig she heard herself saying such things to was as if she had the old doctor once mo hands.

"What more, Grizel? I like you to about."

"Only this. Good afternoon."

"But I am to walk home with y entreated.

"No," she said decisively; but she smil upon a time it had been she who asked f

"If you are good," she said, "you shall see me to-morrow."

"Perhaps only?" He was scared; smiled happily again: it had once been had to beg that there should be no perhap

"If you are good," she replied,—"and not good when you have such a long face you silly boy; smile when I order you. don't I shall not so much as look out at dow to-morrow."

e was the man who had caused her so much
y, and she was looking at him with the eter-
forgiving smile of the mother. "Ah, Grizel,"
my cried passionately, "how brave and un-
h and noble you are, and what a glorious wife
intended you to be!"

he broke from him with a little cry, but when
turned round again it was to nod and smile to
.

CHAPTER XX

A LOVE-LETTER

SOME beautiful days followed, so beauti Grizel that as they passed away she kiss hand to them. Do you see her standing on to see the last of them? They lit a fire chamber of her soul which is the home of a maids, and the fag ts that warmed Grize every fond look that had been on her love and every sweet word he had let fall. She c and fondled them, and pretended that one v that she might hug it more than all the when it was found. To sit by that fire was better than having the days that lit it; son she could scarcely wait for the day to go.

Tommy's fond looks and sweet words! was also a letter in those days, and, now th member, a little garnet ring; and there wer other fagots, but all so trifling it must se credible to you that they could have made a blaze—nothing else in it, on my honour, a girl's heart added by herself that the fire *burn a moment* longer.

And now, what so chilly as the fire that has gone out! Gone out long ago, dear Grizel, while you crouched over it. You may put your hand in the ashes; they will not burn you now. Ah, Grizel, why do you sit there in the cold?

The day of the letter! It began in dread, but ended so joyfully, do you think Grizel grudged the dread? It became dear to her; she loved to return to it and gaze at the joy it glorified, as one sees the sunshine from a murky room. When she heard the postman's knock she was not even curious; so few letters came to her, she thought this must be Maggy Ann's monthly one from Aberdeen, and went on placidly dusting. At last she lifted it from the floor, for it had been slipped beneath the door, and then Grizel was standing in her little lobby, panting as if at the end of a race. The letter lay in both her hands, and they rose slowly until they were pressed against her breast.

She uttered some faint cries (it was the only moment in which I have known Grizel to be hysterical), and then she ran to her room and locked herself in—herself and it. Do you know why that look of elation had come suddenly to her face? It was because he had not even written the address in a disguised hand to deceive the postmistress. So much of the old Grizel was gone that the pathos of her elation over this was lost to her.

Several times she almost opened it. Why did she

pause? why had that frightened look come
eyes? She put the letter on her table ar
away from it. If she took a step nearer, h
went behind her back as if saying, "Griz
ask us to open it; we are afraid."

Perhaps it really did say the dear thi
love writes. Perhaps it was aghast at the
was treating it. Dear letter! Her mouth
to it, but her hands remained afraid. As s
irresolute, smiling, and afraid, she was a li
her mother. I have put off as long as
saying that Grizel was ever like her mothe
Painted Lady had never got any letters w
was in Thrums, but she looked wistfully
of other people. "They are so pretty,"
said; "but don't open them: when you op
they break your heart." Grizel remember
her mother had said.

Had the old Grizel feared what might b
it would have made her open the lett
quickly. Two minds to one person wer
durable to her. But she seemed to be a
now. It was pitiable.

Perhaps it was quite a common little le
ginning "Dear Grizel," and saying nothi
delicious or more terrible than that he wa
to lend him one of the doctor's books. She
of a score of trivialities it might be about;
letter was still unopened when David C

called to talk over some cases in which he required her counsel. He found her sitting listlessly, something in her lap which she at once concealed. She failed to follow his arguments, and he went away puckering his brows, some of the old doctor's sayings about her ringing loud in his ears.

One of them was: "Things will be far wrong with Grizel when she is able to sit idle with her hands in her lap."

Another: "She is almost pitifully straightforward, man. Everything that is in Grizel must out. She can hide nothing."

Yet how cunningly she had concealed what was in her hands. Cunning applied to Grizel! David shuddered. He thought of Tommy, and shut his mouth tight. He could do this easily. Tommy could not do it without feeling breathless. They were types of two kinds of men.

David also remembered a promise he had given McQueen, and wondered, as he had wondered a good deal of late, whether the time had come to keep it.

But Grizel sat on with her unopened letter. She was to meet Tommy presently on the croquet lawn of the Dovecot, when Ailie was to play Mr. James (the champion), and she decided that she must wait till then. She would know what sort of letter it was the moment she saw his face. And *then! She pressed* her hands together.

Oh, how base of her to doubt him! She said it to herself then and often afterwards. She looked mournfully in her mother's long mirror at this disloyal Grizel, as if the capacity to doubt him was the saddest of all the changes that had come to her. He had been so true yesterday; oh, how could she tremble to-day? Beautiful yesterday! but yesterday may seem so long ago. How little a time had passed between the moment when she was greeting him joyously in Caddam Wood and that cry of the heart, "How could you hurt your Grizel so!" No, she could not open her letter. She could kiss it, but she could not open it.

Foolish fears! for before she had shaken hands with Tommy in Mrs. McLean's garden she knew he loved her still, and that the letter proved it. She was properly punished, yet surely in excess, for when she might have been reading her first love-letter, she had to join in discussions with various ladies about Berlin wool and the like, and to applaud the prowess of Mr. James with the loathly croquet mallet. It seemed quite a long time before Tommy could get a private word with her. Then he began about the letter at once.

"You are not angry with me for writing it?" he asked anxiously. "I should not have done it; I had no right: but such a desire to do it came *over me*, I had to; it was such a glory to me to *say in writing* what you are to me."

She smiled happily. Oh, exquisite day! "I ve so long wanted to have a letter from you," e said. "I have almost wished you would go ay for a little time, so that I might have a letter m you."

He had guessed this. He had written to give r delight.

"Did you like the first words of it, Grizel?" he ked eagerly.

The lover and the artist spoke together.

Could she admit that the letter was unopened, nd why? Oh, the pain to him! She nodded ssent. It was not really an untruth, she told herelf. She did like them — oh, how she liked hem, though she did not know what they were!

"I nearly began 'My beloved,'" he said solemnly.

Somehow she had expected it to be this. "Why did n't you?" she asked, a little disappointed.

"I like the other so much better," he replied. "To write it was so delicious to me, I thought you would not mind."

"I don't mind," she said hastily. (What could t be?)

"But you would have preferred 'beloved'?"

"It is such a sweet name."

"Surely not so sweet as the other, Grizel?"

"No," she *said*, "*no*." (Oh, what could it be!)

"Have you destroyed it?" he asked, and the question was a shock to her. Her hand rose instinctively to defend something that lay near her heart.

"I could not," she whispered.

"Do you mean you wanted to?" he asked dolefully.

"I thought you wanted it," she murmured.

"I!" he cried, aghast, and she was joyous again.

"Can't you guess where it is?" she said.

He understood. "Grizel! You carry my letter there!"

She was full of glee; but she puzzled him presently.

"Do you think I could go now?" she inquired eagerly.

"And leave me?"

It was dreadful of her, but she nodded.

"I want to go home."

"Is it not home, Grizel, when you are with me?"

"I want to go away from home, then." She said it as if she loved to tantalize him.

"But why?"

"I won't tell you." She was looking wistfully at the door. "I have something to do."

"It can wait."

"*It has* waited too long." He might have heard *an assenting* rustle from beneath her bodice.

"Do let me go," she said coaxingly, as if he held her.

"I can't understand ——" he began, and broke off. She was facing him demurely but exultantly, challenging him, he could see, to read her now. "Just when I am flattering myself that I know everything about you, Grizel," he said, with a long face, "I suddenly wonder whether I know anything."

She would have liked to clap her hands. "You must remember that we have changed places," she told him. "It is I who understand you now."

"And I am devoutly glad," he made answer, with humble thankfulness. "And I must ask you, Grizel, why you want to run away from me."

"But you think you know," she retorted smartly. "You think I want to read my letter again!"

Her cleverness staggered him. "But I am right, am I not, Grizel?"

"No," she said triumphantly, "you are quite wrong. Oh, if you knew how wrong you are!" And having thus again unhorsed him, she made her excuses to Ailie and slipped away. Dr. Gemmell, who was present and had been watching her narrowly, misread the flush on her face and her restless desire to be gone.

"Is there anything between those two, do you think?" Mrs. McLean had said in a twitter to him while Tommy and Grizel were talking, and he had *answered No* almost sharply.

"People are beginning to think there is," she said in self-defence.

"They are mistaken," he told her curtly, and it was about this time that Grizel left. David followed her to her home soon afterwards, and Maggy Ann, who answered his summons, did not accompany him upstairs. He was in the house daily, and she left him to find Grizel for himself. He opened the parlour door almost as he knocked, and she was there, but had not heard him. He stopped short, like one who had blundered unawares on what was not for him.

She was on her knees on the hearth-rug, with her head buried in what had been Dr. McQueen's chair. Ragged had been the seat of it on the day when she first went to live with him, but very early on the following morning, or, to be precise, five minutes after daybreak, he had risen to see if there were burglars in the parlour, and behold, it was his grateful little maid repadding the old arm-chair. How a situation repeats itself! Without disturbing her, the old doctor had slipped away with a full heart. It was what the young doctor did now.

But the situation was not quite the same. She had been bubbling over with glee then; she was sobbing now. David could not know that it was a sob of joy; he knew only that he had never *seen her* crying before, and that it was the letter in

her hands that had brought tears at last to those once tranquil and steadfast eyes.

In an odd conversation which had once taken place in that room between the two doctors, Gemmell had said: "But the time may come without my knowing it." And McQueen's reply was: "I don't think so, for she is so open; but I'll tell you this, David, as a guide. I never saw her eyes wet. It is one of the touching things about her that she has the eyes of a man, to whom it is a shame to cry. If you ever see her greeting, David, I'm sore doubting that the time will have come."

As David Gemmell let himself softly out of the house, to return to it presently, he thought the time had come. What he conceived he had to do was a hard thing, but he never thought of not doing it. He had kept himself in readiness to do it for many days now, and he walked to it as firmly as if he were on his professional rounds. He did not know that the skin round his eyes had contracted, giving them the look of pain which always came there when he was sorry or pitiful or indignant. He was not well acquainted with his eyes, and, had he glanced at them now in a glass, would have presumed that this was their usual expression.

Grizel herself opened the door to him this time, and "Maggy Ann, he is found!" she cried victoriously. Evidently she had heard of his previous *visit.* "*We have* searched every room in the

house for you," she said gaily, "and had you disappeared for much longer, Maggy Ann would have had the carpets up."

He excused himself on the ground that he had forgotten something, and she chided him merrily for being forgetful. As he sat with her David could have groaned aloud. How vivacious she had become! but she was sparkling in false colours. After what he knew had been her distress of a few minutes ago, it was a painted face to him. She was trying to deceive him. Perhaps she suspected that he had seen her crying, and now, attired in all a woman's wiles, she was defying him to believe his eyes.

Grizel garbed in wiles! Alack the day! She was shielding the man, and Gemmell could have driven her away roughly to get at him. But she was also standing over her own pride, lest anyone should see that it had fallen; and do you think that David would have made her budge an inch?

Of course she saw that he had something on his mind. She knew those puckered eyes so well, and had so often smoothed them for him.

"What is it, David?" she asked sympathetically. "I see you have come as a patient to-night."

"As one of those patients," he rejoined, "who feel better at mere sight of the doctor."

"Fear of the prescription?" said she.

"*Not if* you prescribe yourself, Grizel."

David!" she cried. He had been paying com
ents!
I mean it."
So I can see by your face. Oh, David, how
you look!"
Dr. McQueen and I," he retorted, "used to
private meetings after you had gone to bed,
hich we agreed that you should no longer be
wed to make fun of us. They came to no-
g. Do you know why?"
Because I continued to do it?"
No; but because we missed it so much if you
pped."
You are nice to-night, David," she said, drop-
g him a courtesy.
We liked all your bullying ways," he went
"We were children in your masterful hands."
I was a tyrant, David," she said, looking prop-
ashamed. "I wonder you did not marry, just
get rid of me."
Have you ever seriously wondered why I
't marry?" he asked quickly.
Oh, David," she exclaimed, "what else do you
nk your patients and I talk of when I am trying
nurse them? It has agitated the town ever
e you first walked up the Marrywellbrae, and
can't get on with our work for thinking of

Seriously, Grizel?"

She became grave at once. "If you could the right woman," she said wistfully.

"I have found her," he answered; and the pressed her hands together, too excited to sp

"If she would only care a little for me," h

Grizel rocked her arms. "I am sure she she cried. "David, I am so glad!"

He saw what her mistake was, but pret not to know that she had made one. "A really glad that I love you, Grizel?" he ask

It seemed to daze her for a moment. "N David," she said softly, as if correcting him. don't mean that it is me?" she said coa "David," she cried, "say it is not me!"

He drooped his head, but not before he ha all the brightness die out of her face. "I painful to you even to hear me say it?" he gravely.

Her joy had been selfish as her sorro For nigh a minute she had been thinking self alone, it meant so much to her; but n jumped up and took his hand in hers.

"Poor David!" she said, making much hand as if she had hurt it. But David Gen was too simple a face to oppose to her eyes, and presently she let his hand slip fr and stood regarding him curiously. He look another way, and then she even sm little forlornly.

"Do you mind talking it over with me, Grizel?" he asked. "I have always been well aware that you did not care for me in that way, but nevertheless I believe you might do worse."

"No woman could do better," she answered gravely. "I should like you to talk it over, David, if you begin at the beginning"; and she sat down with her hands crossed.

"I won't say what a good thing it would be for me," was his beginning; "we may take that for granted."

"I don't think we can," she remarked; "but it scarcely matters at present. That is not the beginning, David."

He was very anxious to make it the beginning.

"I am weary of living in lodgings," he said. "The practice suffers by my not being married. Many patients dislike being attended by a single man. I ought to be in McQueen's house; it has been so long known as the doctor's house. And you should be a doctor's wife—you who could almost be the doctor. It would be a shame, Grizel, if you who are so much to patients were to marry out of the profession. Don't you follow me?"

"I follow you," she replied; "but what does it matter? You have not begun at the beginning." He looked at her inquiringly. "You *must begin," she informed* him, "by saying why

you ask me to marry you when you dor me." She added, in answer to another loc him: "You know you don't." There was reproach in it. "Oh, David, what made yo I could be so easily taken in!"

He looked so miserable that by and smiled, not so tremulously as before.

"How bad at it you are, David!" she s

And how good at it she was! he thought g

"Shall I help you out?" she asked ger speaking with dignity. "You think I happy; you believe I am in the position i you placed yourself, of caring for someo does not care for me."

"Grizel, I mistrust him."

She flushed; she was not quite so gent "And so you offer me your hand to save was a great self-sacrifice, David, but you u to be fond of doing showy things."

"I did not mean it to be showy," he ar

She was well aware of that, but —— " vid," she cried, "that you should believe I it! How little you must think of me!"

"Does it look as if I thought little of yo said.

"Little of my strength, David, little pride."

"I think so much of them that how stand by silently and watch them go?"

"You think you have seen that!" She was
tated now.
He hesitated. "Yes," he said courageously.
Her eyes cried, "David, how could you be so
el!" but they did not daunt him.
"Have you not seen it yourself, Grizel?" he
d.
She pressed her hands together. "I was so
ppy," she said, "until you came!"
"Have you not seen it yourself?" he asked
ain.
"There may be better things," she retorted,
than those you rate so highly."
"Not for you," he said.
"If they are gone," she told him, with a flush
resentment, "it is not you who can bring them
ck."
"But let me try, Grizel," said he.
"David, can I not even make you angry with
e?"
"No, Grizel, you can't. I am very sorry that I
n make you angry with me."
"I am not," she said dispiritedly. "It would be
ntemptible in me." And then, eagerly: "But,
avid, you have made a great mistake, indeed you
ve. You — you are a dreadful bungler, sir!"
e was trying to make his face relax, with a
mulous smile from herself to encourage him;
t the effort was not successful. "You see, I can't

even bully you now!" she said. "Did that capacity go with the others, David?"

"Try a little harder," he replied. "I think you will find that I submit to it still."

"Very well." She forced some gaiety to her aid. After all, how could she let his monstrous stupidity wound a heart protected by such a letter?

"You have been a very foolish and presumptuous boy," she began. She was standing up, smiling, wagging a reproachful but nervous finger at him. "If it were not that I have a weakness for seeing medical men making themselves ridiculous so that I may put them right, I should be very indignant with you, sir."

"Put me right, Grizel," he said. He was sure she was trying to blind him again.

"Know, then, David, that I am not the poor-spirited, humble creature you seem to have come here in search of——"

"But you admitted——"

"How dare you interrupt me, sir! Yes, I admit that I am not quite as I was, but I glory in it. I used to be ostentatiously independent; now I am only independent enough. My pride made me walk on air; now I walk on the earth, where there is less chance of falling. I have still confidence in *myself;* but I begin to see that ways are not *necessarily right* because they are my ways. In short,

vid, I am evidently on the road to being a
del character!"

They were gay words, but she ended somewhat
ntly.

"I was satisfied with you as you were," was
doctor's comment.

"I wanted to excel!"

"You explain nothing, Grizel," he said re-
achfully. "Why have you changed so?"

"Because I am so happy. Do you remember
w, in the old days, I sometimes danced for joy?
could do it now."

"Are you engaged to be married, Grizel?"

She took a quiet breath. "You have no right
question me in this way," she said. "I think I
ve been very good in bearing with you so
ng."

But she laid aside her indignation at once; he
s so old a friend, the sincerity of him had been
often tried. "If you must know, David," she
d, with a girlish frankness that became her bet-
, "I am not engaged to be married. And I
st tell you nothing more," she added, shutting
r mouth decisively. She must be faithful to her
omise.

"He forbids it?" Gemmell asked mercilessly.

She stamped her foot, not in rage, but in hope-
sness. "How incapable you are of doing him
tice!" she cried. "If you only knew ——"

"Tell me. I want to do him justice."

She sat down again, sighing. "My atte to regain my old power over you has not b very successful, has it, David? We must quarrel, though"— holding out her hand, wh he grasped. "And you won't question me more?" She said it appealingly.

"Never again," he answered. "I never wan to question you, Grizel. I wanted only to ma you."

"And that can't be."

"I don't see it," he said, so stoutly that she w almost amused. But he would not be pushe aside. He had something more to say.

"Dr. McQueen wished it," he said; "above else in the world he wished it. He often to me so."

"He never said that to me," Grizel replie quickly.

"Because he thought that to press you was n way to make you care for me. He hoped that it would come about."

"It has not come about, David, with either of us," she said gently. "I am sure that would have been sufficient answer to him."

"No, Grizel, it would not, not now."

He had risen, and his face was whiter than she had ever seen it.

"I am going to hurt you, Grizel," he said, an

every word was a pang to him. "I see no other way. It has got to be done. Dr. McQueen often talked to me about the things that troubled you when you were a little girl — the morbid fears you had then, and that had all been swept away years before I knew you. But though they had been long gone, you were so much to him that he tried to think of everything that might happen to you in the future, and he foresaw that they might possibly come back. 'If she were ever to care for some false loon!' he has said to me, and then, Grizel, he could not go on."

Grizel beat her hands. "If he could not go on," she said, "it was not because he feared what I should do."

"No, no," David answered eagerly, "he never feared for that, but for your happiness. He told me of a boy who used to torment you, oh, all so long ago, and of such little account that he had forgotten his name. But that boy has come back, and you care for him, and he is a false loon, Grizel."

She had risen too, and was flashing fire on David; but he went on.

"'If the time ever comes,' he said to me, 'when you see her in torture from such a cause, speak to her openly about it. Tell her it is I who am speaking through you. It will be a hard task to you, but wrestle through with it, David, in mem-

ory of any little kindness I may have done you, and the great love I bore my Grizel.' "

She was standing rigid now. "Is there any more, David?" she said in a low voice.

"Only this. I admired you then as I admire you now. I may not love you, Grizel, but of this I am very sure"—he was speaking steadily, he was forgetting no one—"that you are the noblest and bravest woman I have ever known, and I promised—he did not draw the promise from me, I gave it to him—that if I was a free man and could help you in any way without paining you by telling you these things, I would try that way first."

"And this is the way?"

"I could think of no other. Is it of no avail?"

She shook her head. "You have made such a dreadful mistake," she cried miserably, "and you won't see it. Oh, how you wrong him! I am the happiest girl in the world, and it is he who makes me so happy. But I can't explain. You need not ask me; I promised, and I won't."

"You used not to be so fond of mystery, Grizel."

"I am not fond of it now."

"Ah, it is he," David said bitterly, and he lifted his hat. "Is there nothing you will let me do for *you, Grizel*?" he cried.

"*I thought* you were to do so much for me when

me into this room," she admitted wistfully,
aid that you were in love. I thought it was
ıother woman."
remembered that her face had brightened.
could that have helped you?" he asked.
saw that she had but to tell him, and for
e he would do it at once. But she could
so selfish.
e need not speak of that now," she said.
e must speak of it," he answered. "Grizel,
ut fair to me. It may be so important to

ıu have shown that you don't care for her,
and that ends it."
ho is it?" He was much stirred.
you don't know——"
it Elspeth?"
question came out of him like a confession,
pe turned Grizel giddy.
you love her, David?" she cried.
he hesitated. "Is what you have told me
at it would help you?" he asked, looking
in the eyes.
you love her?" she implored, but he was
ined to have her answer first.
it, Grizel?"
s, yes. Do you, David?"
then he admitted that he did, and she rocked
ıs in joy.

"But oh, David, to say such things to me v you were not a free man! How badly you treated Elspeth to-day!"

"She does not care for me," he said.

"Have you asked her?"—in alarm.

"No; but could she?"

"How could she help it?" She would nc him what Tommy thought. Oh, she mus everything to encourage David.

"And still," said he, puzzling, "I don't see it can affect you."

"And I can't tell you," she moaned. David, do, do find out. Why are you so bli She could have shaken him. "Don't you se once Elspeth was willing to be taken care (some other person —— I must not tell you

"Then he would marry you?"

She cried in anxiety: "Have I told you, (you find out?"

"I found out," he said. "Is it possible he fond of her as that?"

"There never was such a brother," she ansv She could not help adding, "But he is still f of me."

The doctor pulled his arm over his eyes a down again. Presently he was saying with a face: "I came here to denounce the cause of unhappiness, and I begin to see it is myself."

"Of course it is, you stupid David," sh

efully. She was very kind to the man who had
n willing to do so much for her; but as the
or closed on him she forgot him. She even
used to hear the warning voice he had brought
th him from the dead. She was re-reading the
ter that began by calling her wife.

CHAPTER XXI

THE ATTEMPT TO CARRY ELSPETH BY NUMBERS

THAT was one of Grizel's beautiful days, but the were others to follow as sweet, if not so excitin she could travel back through the long length them without coming once to a moment when s had held her breath in sudden fear; and this was delicious that she sometimes thought these wer the best days of all.

Of course she had little anxieties, but they were nearly all about David. He was often at Aaron house now, and what exercised her was this—tha she could not be certain that he was approachin Elspeth in the right way. The masterful Grize seemed to have come to life again, for, evidently she was convinced that she alone knew the righ way.

"Oh, David, I would not have said that to her! she told him, when he reported progress; and no she would warn him, "You are too humble," an again, "You were over-bold." The doctor, to hi bewilderment, frequently discovered, on laying r

Its before her, that what he had looked upon as couraging signs were really bad, and that, on e other hand, he had often left the cottage dis-nsolately when he ought to have been strutting. The issue was that he lost all faith in his own dgment, and if Grizel said that he was getting on ell, his face became foolishly triumphant, but if he frowned, it cried, "All is over!"

Of the proposal Tommy did not know; it eemed to her that she had no right to tell even im of that; but the rest she did tell him: that David, by his own confession, was in love with Elspeth; and so pleased was Tommy that his delight made another day for her to cherish.

So now everything depended on Elspeth. "Oh, if she only would!" Grizel cried, and for her sake Tommy tried to look bright, but his head shook in spite of him.

"Do you mean that we should discourage David?" she asked dolefully; but he said No to that.

"I was afraid," she confessed, "that as you are so hopeless, you might think it your duty to dis-courage him so as to save him the pain of a refusal."

"Not at all," Tommy said, with some hasti-ness.

"Then you do really have a tiny bit of hope?"

"While there is life there is hope," he answered.

She said: "I have been thinking it over, for it is so important to us, and I see various ways in which you could help David, if you would."

"What would I not do, Grizel! You have to name them only."

"Well, for instance, you might show her that you have a very high opinion of him."

"Agreed. But she knows that already."

"Then, David is an only child. Don't you think you could say that men who have never had a sister are peculiarly gentle and considerate to women?"

"Oh, Grizel! But I think I can say that."

"And — and that having been so long accustomed to doing everything for themselves, they don't need managing wives as men brought up among women need them."

"Yes. But how cunning you are, Grizel! Who would have believed it?"

"And then ——" She hesitated.

"Go on. I see by your manner that this is to be a big one."

"It would be such a help," she said eagerly, "if you could be just a little less attentive to her. I know you do ever so much of the housework because she is not fond of it; and if she has a headache you sit with her all day; and you beg her to play and sing to you, though you really dislike *music*. Oh, there are scores of things you do for

her, and if you were to do them a little less willingly, in such a way as to show her that they interrupt your work and are a slight trial to you, I — I am sure that would help!"

"She would see through me, Grizel. Elspeth is sharper than you think her."

"Not if you did it very skilfully."

"Then she would believe I had grown cold to her, and it would break her heart."

"One of your failings," replied Grizel, giving him her hand for a moment as recompense for what she was about to say, "is that you think women's hearts break so easily. If, at the slightest sign that she notices any change in you, you think her heart is breaking, and seize her in your arms, crying, 'Elspeth, dear little Elspeth!' — and that is what your first impulse would be ——"

"How well you know me, Grizel!" groaned Sentimental Tommy.

"If that would be the result," she went on, "better not do it at all. But if you were to restrain yourself, then she could not but reflect that many of the things you did for her with a sigh David did for pleasure, and she would compare him and you ——"

"To my disadvantage!" Tommy exclaimed, with sad incredulity. "Do you really think she could, Grizel?"

"*Give her the chance*," Grizel continued, "and

if you find it hard, you must remember that w
you are doing is for her good."

"And for ours," Tommy cried fervently.

Every promise he made her at this time he f
filled, and more; he was hopeless, but all a m
could do to make Elspeth love David he did.

The doctor was quite unaware of it. "Fort
nately, her brother had a headache yesterday a
was lying down," he told Grizel, with calm brut
ity, "so I saw her alone for a few minutes."

"The fibs I have to invent," said Tommy, t
the same confidante, "to get myself out of the
way!"

"Luckily he does not care for music," Davi
said, "so when she is at the piano he sometim
remains in the kitchen talking to Aaron."

Tommy and Aaron left together! Tommy d
scribed those scenes with much good humour. '
was amazed at first," he said to Grizel, "to fi
Aaron determinedly enduring me, but now I u
derstand. He wants what we want. He says n
a word about it, but he is watching those t
courting like a born match-maker. Aaron h
several reasons for hoping that Elspeth will
our friend (as he would express it): one, that t
would keep her in Thrums; another, that to
the wife of a doctor is second only in worl
grandeur to marrying the manse; and thirdly
lastly, because he is convinced that it would

such a staggerer to me. For he thinks I have not a notion of what is going on, and that, if I had, I would whisk her away to London."

He gave Grizel the most graphic, solemn pictures of those evenings in the cottage. "Conceive the four of us gathered round the kitchen fire — three men and a maid; the three men yearning to know what is in the maid's mind, and each concealing his anxiety from the others. Elspeth gives the doctor a look which may mean much or nothing, and he glares at me as if I were in the way, and I glance at Aaron, and he is on tenter-hooks lest I have noticed anything. Next minute, perhaps, David gives utterance to a plaintive sigh, and Aaron and I pounce upon Elspeth (with our eyes) to observe its effect on her, and Elspeth wonders why Aaron is staring, and he looks apprehensively at me, and I am gazing absent-mindedly at the fender.

"You may smile, Grizel," Tommy would say, "and now that I think of it, I can smile myself, but we are an eerie quartet at the time. When the strain becomes unendurable, one of us rises and mends the fire with his foot, and then I think the rest of us could say 'Thank you.' We talk desperately for a little after that, but soon again the awful pall creeps down."

"If I were there," cried Grizel, "I would not *have the parlour* standing empty all this time."

"We are coming to the parlour," Tommy impressively. "The parlour, Grizel, now b stir. Elspeth has disappeared from the k we three men know not whither. We did tice her go; we don't even observe that gone — we are too busy looking at the fi and by the tremulous tinkling of an age reaches us from an adjoining chamber, and looks at me through his fingers, and I take ning glance at Mr. David, and he uncro legs and rises, and sits down again. Aaron most unconcerned way, proceeds to cut and rub it between his fingers, and I stre my legs and contemplate them with passion proval. While we are thus occupied Da risen, and he is so thoroughly at his ease has begun to hum. He strolls round the k looking with sudden interest at the mantelp naments; he reads, for the hundredth ti sampler on the wall. Next the clock enga attention; it is ticking, and that seems to him as novel and curious. By this time reached the door; it opens to his touch, and of abstraction he leaves the room."

"You don't follow him into the parlour Grizel, anxiously.

"Follow whom?" Tommy replies severe don't even know that he has gone to the now that I think of it, I have not even

that he has left the kitchen; nor has Aaron noticed it. Aaron and I are not in a condition to notice such things; we are conscious only that at last we have the opportunity for the quiet social chat we so much enjoy in each other's company. That, at least, is Aaron's way of looking at it, and he keeps me there with talk of the most varied and absorbing character; one topic down, another up; when very hard put to it, he even questions me about my next book, as if he would like to read the proof-sheets, and when I seem to be listening, a little restively, for sounds from the parlour (the piano has stopped), he has the face of one who would bar the door rather than lose my society. Aaron appreciates me at my true value at last, Grizel. I had begun to despair almost of ever bringing him under my charm."

"I should be very angry with you," Grizel said warningly, "if I thought you teased the poor old man."

"Tease him! The consideration I show that poor old man, Grizel, while I know all the time that he is plotting to diddle me! You should see me when it is he who is fidgeting to know why the piano has stopped. He stretches his head to listen, and does something to his ear that sends it another inch nearer the door; he chuckles and groans on the sly; and I—I notice nothing. Oh, he is *becoming quite fond of* me; he thinks me an idiot."

"Why not tell him that you want it as much as he?"

"He would not believe me. Aaron is firmly convinced that I am too jealous of Elspeth's affection to give away a thimbleful of it. He blames me for preventing her caring much even for him."

"At any rate," said Grizel, "he is on our side, and it is because he sees it would be so much the best thing for her."

"And, at the same time, such a shock to me. That poor old man, Grizel! I have seen him rubbing his hands together with glee and looking quite leery as he thought of what was coming to me."

But Grizel could not laugh now. When Tommy saw so well through Aaron and David, through everyone he came in contact with, indeed, what hope could there be that he was deceived in Elspeth?

"And yet she knows what takes him there; she must know it!" she cried.

"A woman," Tommy said, "is never sure that a man is in love with her until he proposes. She may fancy—but it is never safe to fancy, as so many have discovered."

"She has no right," declared Grizel, "to wait *until she is* sure, if she does not care for him. If *she fears* that he is falling in love with her, she

nows how to discourage him; there are surely a undred easy, kind ways of doing that."

"Fears he is falling in love with her!" Tommy peated. "Is any woman ever afraid of that?"

He really bewildered her. "No woman would ike it," Grizel answered promptly for them all, ecause she would not have liked it. "She must e that it would result only in pain to him."

"Still ——" said Tommy.

"Oh, but how dense you are!" she said, in surprise. "Don't you understand that she would stop him, though it were for no better reasons than selfish ones? Consider her shame if, in thinking it over afterwards, she saw that she might have stopped him sooner! Why," she cried, with a sudden smile, "it is in your book! You say: 'Every maiden carries secretly in her heart an idea of love so pure and sacred that, if by any act she is once false to that conception, her punishment is that she never dares to look at it again.' And this is one of the acts you mean."

"I had not thought of it, though," he said humbly. He was never prouder of Grizel than at that moment. "If Elspeth's outlook," he went on, "is different ——"

"It can't be different."

"If it is, the fault is mine; yes, though I wrote the passage that you interpret so nobly, Grizel. Shall I tell you," he said gently, "what I believe

is Elspeth's outlook exactly, just now knows that the doctor is attracted by her gives her little thrills of exultation; but th be love — she puts that question in such voice, as if to prevent herself hearing it. she listens, Grizel, like one who would know! Elspeth is pitifully distrustful one's really loving her, and she will never herself that he does until he tells her."

"And then?"

Tommy had to droop his head.

"I see you have still no hope!" she sai

"It would be so easy to pretend I have plied, with longing, "in order to cheer yo moment. Oh, it would even be easy t deceive myself; but should I do it?"

"No, no," she said; "anything but tha bear anything but that," and she shudderec we seem to be treating David cruelly."

"I don't think so," he assured her. "N to have these things to look back to. Bu want it, Grizel, I have to say only a wor speth to bring it to an end. She is as t she is innocent, and — but it would be a h to me," he admitted, his heart suddenly g to Elspeth; he had never deprived her gratification before. "Still, I am willing t

"No!" Grizel cried, restraining him hand. "I am a coward, I suppose, but I c

inting to hope for a little longer, and David on't grudge it to me."

It was but a very little longer that they had to ait. Tommy, returning home one day from a alk with his old school-friend, Gav Dishart (now .A.), found Aaron suspiciously near the parlour eyhole.

"There's a better fire in the other end," Aaron aid, luring him into the kitchen. So desirous was e of keeping Tommy there, fixed down on a stool, hat "I'll play you at the dambrod," he said briskly.

"Anyone with Elspeth?"

"Some women-folk you dinna like," replied Aaron.

Tommy rose. Aaron, with a subdued snarl, got etween him and the door.

"I was wondering, merely," Tommy said, point- ng pleasantly to something on the dresser, "why ne of them wore the doctor's hat."

"I forgot; he's there, too," Aaron said promptly; ut he looked at Tommy with misgivings. They at down to their game.

"You begin," said Tommy; "you're black." And Aaron opened with the Double Corner; but so pre- occupied was he that it became a variation of the Ayrshire lassie, without his knowing. His suspi- cions had to find vent in words: "You dinna speir wha the women-folk are?"

"No."

"Do you think I'm just pretending they'r there?" Aaron asked apprehensively.

"Not at all," said Tommy, with much polit ness, "but I thought you might be mistaken." H could have "blown" Aaron immediately thereafte but, with great consideration, forbore. The old ma was so troubled that he could not lift a king wit out its falling in two. His sleeve got in the wa of his fingers. At last he sat back in his chair. "D you ken what is going on, man?" he demande "or do you no ken? I can stand this doubt n longer."

A less soft-hearted person might have affect not to understand, but that was not Tommy way. "I know, Aaron," he admitted. "I ha known all the time." It was said in the kindli manner, but its effect on Aaron was not soot ing.

"Curse you!" he cried, with extraordinary veh mence, "you have been playing wi' me a' the tim ay, and wi' him and wi' her!"

What had Aaron been doing with Tommy? B Tommy d... ask th...

"I a... ...adly of me," he sa ...etly ... ...he time, Aaron, b

...a take him.

... your pow

honest man that thinks he could take her frae
is to you but a divert."

He took a step nearer Tommy. "Listen," he
. "When you came back he was on the point
peiring her; I saw it in his face as she was play-
the piano, and she saw it, too, for her hands
gan to trem'le and the tune wouldna play. I
rsay you think I was keeking, but if I was I
ppit it when the piano stoppit; it was a hard
g to me to do, and it would hae been an easy
g no to do, but I wouldna spy upon Elspeth in
great hour."

'I like you for that, Aaron," Tommy said; but
on waved his likes aside.

'The reason I stood at the door," he continued,
as to keep you out o' that room. I offered to
you at the dambrod to keep you out. Ay, you
that without my telling you, but do you ken
t makes me tell you now? It's to see whether
'll go in and stop him; let's see you do that,
I'll hae some hope yet." He waited eagerly.

'You do puzzle me now," Tommy said.

'Ay," replied the old man, bitterly, "you're dull in
uptak' when you like! I dinna ken, I suppose,
you dinna ken, that if you had the least dread
er taking him you would be into that room full
d to stop it; but you're so sure o' her, you're
michty sure, that you can sit here and lauch
ead."

"Am I laughing, Aaron? If you but knew, Elspeth's marriage would be a far more joyful thing to me than it could ever be to you."

The old warper laughed unpleasantly at that. "And I'se uphaud," he said, "you're none sure but what she'll tak' him! You're no as sure she'll refuse him as that there's a sun in the heavens, and I'm a broken man."

For a moment sympathy nigh compelled Tommy to say a hopeful thing, but he mastered himself. "It would be weakness," was what he did say, "to pretend that there is any hope."

Aaron gave him an ugly look, and was about to leave the house; but Tommy would not have it. "If one of us must go, Aaron," he said, with much gentleness, "let it be me"; and he went out, passing the parlour door softly, so that he might not disturb poor David. The warper sat on by the fire, his head sunk miserably in his shoulders. The vehemence had passed out of him; you would have hesitated to believe that such a listless, shrunken man could have been vehement that same year. It is a hardy proof of his faith in Tommy that he did not even think it worth while to look up when, by and by, the parlour door opened and the doctor came in for his hat. Elspeth was with him.

They told Aaron something.

It lifted him off his feet and bore him out at the

r. When he made up on himself he knew he searching everywhere for Tommy. A terror ed him, lest he should not be the first to convey news.

Had he been left a fortune? neighbours asked, zed at this unwonted sight; and he replied, as an, "I have, and I want to share it wi' him!" It was his only joke. People came to their ors to see Aaron Latta laughing.

CHAPTER XXII

GRIZEL'S GLORIOUS HOUR

ELSPETH was to be his wife! David had carried the wondrous promise straight to Grizel, and now he was gone and she was alone again.

Oh, foolish Grizel, are you crying, and I thought it was so hard to you to cry!

"Me crying! Oh, no!"

Put your hand to your cheeks, Grizel. Are they not wet?

"They are wet, and I did not know it! It is hard to me to cry in sorrow, but I can cry for joy. I am crying because it has all come right, and I was so much afraid that it never would."

Ah, Grizel, I think you said you wanted nothing else so long as you had his love!

"But God has let it all come right, just the same, and I am thanking Him. That is why I did not know that I was crying."

She was by the fireplace, on the stool that had always been her favourite seat, and of course she sat *very straight*. When Grizel walked or stood her *strong*, round figure took a hundred beautiful poses,

but when she sat it had but one. The old doctor, in experimenting moods, had sometimes compelled her to recline, and then watched to see her body spring erect the moment he released his hold. "What a dreadful patient I should make!" she said contritely. "I would chloroform you, miss," said he.

She sat thus for a long time; she had so much for which to thank God, though not with her lips, for how could they keep pace with her heart? Her heart was very full; chiefly, I think, with the tears that rolled down unknown to her.

She thanked God, in the name of the little hunted girl who had not been taught how to pray, and so did it standing. "I do so want to be good; oh, how sweet it would be to be good!" she had said in that long ago. She had said it out loud when she was alone on the chance of His hearing, but she had not addressed Him by name because she was not sure that he was really called God. She had not even known that you should end by saying "Amen," which Tommy afterwards told her is the most solemn part of it.

How sweet it would be to be good, but how much sweeter it is to be good! The woman that girl had grown into knew that she was good, and she thanked God for that. She thanked Him for letting her help. If He had said that she had not *helped, she would have* rocked her arms and re-

plied almost hotly: "You know I have." He did know: He had seen her many ti the grip of inherited passions, and watch fighting with them and subduing them; H seen ugly thoughts stealing upon her, a crawl towards every child of man; ah, H seen them leap into the heart of the l Lady's daughter, as if a nest already m them must be there, and still she had drive away. Grizel had helped. The tears cam quickly now.

She thanked God that she had never wo ring. But why had she never worn it, wh wanted so much to do so, and it was Why had she watched herself more carefull ever of late, and forced happiness to her fac it was not in her heart, and denied herself, a moments, the luxuries of grief and despair, an of rebellion? For she had carried about wi the capacity to rebel, but she had hidden i the reason was that she thought God was her. If she fell He would not give her the she coveted. Unworthy reason for being g she knew, but God overlooked it, and she th Him for that.

Her hands pressed each other impulsively at the shock of a sudden beautiful thought then perhaps she was thanking God for n her the one woman who could be the righ

Tommy. She was so certain that no other man could help him as she could; none knew virtues as she knew them. Had it not been her, his showy parts only would have been ved; the dear, quiet ones would never have ard how dear they were: the showy ones were en to all the world, but the quiet ones were her ivate garden. His faults as well as his virtues ssed before her, and it is strange to know that it s about this time that Grizel ceased to cry and gan to smile instead. I know why she smiled; was because sentimentality was one of the little nsters that came skipping into her view, and mmy was so confident that he had got rid at last it! Grizel knew better! But she could look it and smile. Perhaps she was not sorry that it s still there with the others, it had so long led procession. I daresay she saw herself taking the ring, distorted thing in hand and making some- ng gallant of it. She thought that she was too actical, too much given to seeing but one side to question, too lacking in consideration for others, o impatient, too relentlessly just, and she humbly anked God for all these faults, because Tommy's ccesses were in the opposite direction, and she uld thus restore the balance. She was full of mility while she saw how useful she could be to m, but her face did not show this; she had for- tten her face, and elation had spread over it

without her knowing. Perhaps God accepted elation as part of the thanks.

She thanked God for giving Tommy what wanted so much — herself. Ah, she had than Him for that before, but she did it again. then she went on her knees by her dear doc chair, and prayed that she might be a good wif Tommy.

When she rose the blood was not sur through her veins. Instead of a passion of jo was a beautiful calm that possessed her, and noticing this she regarded herself with sud suspicion, as we put our ear to a watch to if it has stopped. She found that she was going, but no longer either fast or slow, and saw what had happened: her old serene self come back to her. I think she thanked God that most of all.

And then she caught sight of her face — oh! Her first practical act as an engaged wo was to wash her face.

Engaged! But was she? Grizel laughed. is not usually a laughing matter, but she c not help that. Consider her predicament. could be engaged at once, if she liked, even b she wiped the water from her face, or she m postpone it, to let Tommy share. The ca reader will have noticed that this problem sented itself to her at an awkward moment.

aughed, in short, while her face was still in the basin, with the very proper result that she had to grope for the towel with her eyes shut.

It was still a cold, damp face (Grizel was always in such a hurry) when she opened her most precious drawer and took from it a certain glove which was wrapped in silk paper, but was not perhaps quite so conceited as it had been, for, alas and alack! it was now used as a wrapper itself. The ring was inside it. If Grizel wanted to be engaged, absolutely and at once, all she had to do was to slip that ring upon her finger.

It had been hers for a week or more. Tommy had bought it in a certain Scottish town whose merchant princes are so many, and have risen splendidly from such small beginnings, that after you have been there a short time you beg to be introduced to someone who has not got on. When you look at them they slap their trouser pockets. When they look at you they are wondering if you know how much they are worth. Tommy, one day, roaming their streets (in which he was worth incredibly little), and thinking sadly of what could never be, saw the modest little garnet ring in a jeweller's window, and attached to it was a pathetic story. No other person could have seen the story, but it was as plain to him as though it had been beautifully written on the tag of paper *which really contained* the price. With his hand

on the door he paused, overcome by that l
entering shops without a lady to do the
which all men of genius feel (it is the
test), hurried away, came back, went to and
until he saw that he was yielding once m
indecision he thought he had so comple
tered, whereupon he entered bravely (t
was one of those detestable doors that ri
as they open), and sternly ordered the jew
could have bought and sold our Tommy
slap on the trouser leg, to hand the ring ov

He had no intention of giving it t
That, indeed, was part of its great traged
is the story Tommy read into the ring: T
once a sorrowful man of twenty-three, a
and sixty. Ah, how gray the beard has
we speak! How thin the locks! But still
him for the same by that garnet ring.
became his no other eye has seen it, and
her engagement ring. Never can he give
but must always carry it about with hi
piteous memory of what had never bee
innocent it looked in his hand, and with
cence that never wore off, not even whe
reached his threescore years. As it age
on another kind of innocence only. I
pitiable now, for there is but a dishonoure
a lonely little ring which can never see t
it was made to span.

A hair-shirt! Such it was to him, and he put it on willingly, knowing it could be nothing else. Every smart it gave him pleased, even while it pained. If ever his mind roamed again to the world of make-believe, that ring would jerk him back to facts.

Grizel remembered well her finding of it. She had been in his pockets. She loved to rifle them; to pull out his watch herself, instead of asking him for the time; to exclaim "Oh!" at the many things she found there, when they should have been neatly docketed or in the fire, and from his waistcoat pocket she drew the ring. She seemed to understand all about it at once. She was far ahead while he was explaining. It seemed quite strange to her that there had ever been a time when she did not know of her garnet ring.

How her arms rocked! It was delicious to her to remember now with what agony her arms had rocked. She kissed it; she had not been the first to kiss it.

It was "Oh, how I wish I could have saved you this pain!"

"But I love it," she cried, "and I love the pain."

It was "Am I not to see it on your finger once?"

"No, no; we must not."

"Let me, Grizel!"

"Is it right, *oh*, is it right?"

"*Only this once!*"

"Very well!"

"I dare not, Grizel, I can't! What are we do with it now?"

"Give it to me. It is mine. I will keep beside my glove."

"Let me keep it, Grizel."

"No; it is mine."

"Shall I fling it away?"

"How can you be so cruel? It is mine."

"Let me bury it."

"It is mine."

And of course she had got her way. Could resist her in anything? They had never spok of it since, it was such a sad little ring. Sad! was not in the least little bit sad. Grizel wonder as she looked at it now how she could ever ha thought it sad.

The object with which she put on her hat v to go to Aaron's cottage, to congratulate Elspe So she said to herself. Oh, Grizel!

But first she opened two drawers. They w in a great press and full of beautiful linen wo in Thrums, that had come to Dr. McQueen a "bad debt." "Your marriage portion, yo lady," he had said to Grizel, then but a slip o girl, whereupon, without waiting to lengthen frock, she rushed rapturously at her work-bas "Not at all, miss," he cried ferociously; "you *here to look* after this house, not to be prepa

for another, and until you are respectably bespoken by some rash crittur of a man, into the drawers with your linen and down with those murderous shears." And she had obeyed; no scissors, the most relentless things in nature when in Grizel's hand, had ever cleaved their way through that snowy expanse; never a stitch had she put into her linen except with her eyes, which became horribly like needles as she looked at it.

And now at last she could begin! Oh, but she was anxious to begin; it is almost a fact that, as she looked at those drawers, she grudged the time that must be given to-day to Tommy and his ring.

Do you see her now, ready to start? She was wearing her brown jacket with the fur collar, over which she used to look so searchingly at Tommy. To think there was a time when that serene face had to look searchingly at him! It nearly made her sad again. She paused to bring out the ring and take another exultant look at it. It was attached now to a ribbon round her neck. Sweet ring! She put it to her eyes. That was her way of letting her eyes kiss it. Then she rubbed them and it, in case the one had left a tear upon the other.

And then she went out, joy surging in her heart. For this was Grizel's glorious hour, the end of it.

CHAPTER XXIII

TOMMY LOSES GRIZEL

It was not Aaron's good fortune to find Tommy. He should have looked for him in the Den.

In that haunt of happier lovers than he, Tommy walked slowly, pondering. He scarce noticed that he had the Den to himself, or that, since he was last here, autumn had slipped away, leaving all her garments on the ground. By this time, undoubtedly, Elspeth had said her gentle No; but he was not railing against Fate, not even for striking the final blow at him through that innocent medium. He had still too much to do for that—to help others. There were three of them at present, and by some sort of sympathetic jugglery he had an arm for each.

"Lean on me, Grizel — dear sister Elspeth, you little know the harm you have done — David, old friend, your hand."

Thus loaded, he bravely returned at the fitting time to the cottage. His head was not even bent.

Had you asked Tommy what Elspeth would *probably* do when she dismissed David, he might

ıave replied that she would go up to his room and ock herself into it, so that no one should disturb ıer for a time. And this he discovered, on return- ng home, was actually what had happened. How well he knew her! How distinctly he heard every beat of her tender heart, and how easy to him to tell why it was beating! He did not go up; he waited for little Elspeth to come to him, all in her own good time. And when she came, looking just as he knew she would look, he had a brave, bright face for her.

She was shaking after her excitement, or perhaps she had ceased to shake and begun again as she came down to him. He pretended not to notice it; he would notice it the moment he was sure she wanted him to, but perhaps that would not be until she was in bed and he had come to say good-night and put out her light, for, as we know, she often kept her great confidences till then, when she discovered that he already knew them.

"The doctor has been in."

She began almost at once, and in a quaking voice and from a distance, as if in hope that the bullet might be spent before it reached her brother.

"I am sorry I missed him," he replied cautiously. "What a fine fellow he is!"

"You always liked him," said Elspeth, clinging *eagerly to that.*

'No one could help liking him, Elspeth, he has such winning ways," said Tommy, perhaps a little in the voice with which at funerals we refer to the departed. She loved his words, but she knew she had a surprise for him this time, and she tried to blurt it out.

"He said something to me. He — oh, what a high opinion he has of you!" (She really thought he had.)

"Was that the something?" Tommy asked, with a smile that helped her, as it was meant to do.

"You understand, don't you?" she said, almost in a whisper.

"Of course I do, Elspeth," he answered reassuringly; but somehow she still thought he didn't.

"No one could have been more manly and gentle and humble," she said beseechingly.

"I am sure of it," said Tommy.

"He thinks nothing of himself," she said.

"We shall always think a great deal of him," replied Tommy.

"Yes, but ——" Elspeth found the strangest difficulty in continuing, for, though it would have surprised him to be told so, Tommy was not helping her nearly as much as he imagined.

"I told him," she said, shaking, "that no one *could be* to me what you were. I told him ——" *and then* timid Elspeth altogether broke down.

Tommy drew her to him, as he had so often done since she was the smallest child, and pressed her head against his breast, and waited. So often he had waited thus upon Elspeth.

"There is nothing to cry about, dear," he said tenderly, when the time to speak came. "You have, instead, the right to be proud that so good a man loves you. I am very proud of it, Elspeth."

"If I could be sure of that!" she gasped.

"Don't you believe me, dear?"

"Yes, but — that is not what makes me cry. Tommy, don't you see?"

"Yes," he assured her, "I see. You are crying because you feel so sorry for him. But I don't feel sorry for him, Elspeth. If I know anything at all, it is this: that no man needs pity who sincerely loves; whether that love be returned or not, he walks in a new and more beautiful world for evermore."

She clutched his hand. "I don't understand how you know those things," she whispered.

Please God, was Tommy's reflection, she should never know. He saw most vividly the pathos of his case, but he did not break down under it; it helped him, rather, to proceed.

"It will be the test of Gemmell," he said, "how he bears this. No man, I am very sure, was ever told that his dream could not come true more *kindly and tenderly* than you told it to him." He

was in the middle of the next sentence (a fine one) before her distress stopped him.

"Tommy," she cried, "you don't understand. That is not what I told him at all!"

It was one of the few occasions on which the expression on the face of T. Sandys perceptibly changed.

"What did you tell him?" he asked, almost sharply.

"I accepted him," she said guiltily, backing away from this alarming face.

"What!"

"If you only knew how manly and gentle and humble he was," she cried quickly, as if something dire might happen if Tommy were not assured of this at once.

"You — said you would marry him, Elspeth?"

"Yes!"

"And leave me?"

"Oh, oh!" She flung her arms around his neck.

"Yes, but that is what you are prepared to do!" said he, and he held her away from him and stared at her, as if he had never seen Elspeth before. "Were you not afraid?" he exclaimed, in amazement.

"I am not the least bit afraid," she answered. "Oh Tommy, if you knew how manly ——" And *then she* remembered that she had said that *already.*

"You did not even say that you would — consult me?"

"Oh, oh!"

"Why didn't you, Elspeth?"

"I — I forgot!" she moaned. "Tommy, you are angry!" She hugged him, and he let her do it, but all the time he was looking over her head fixedly, with his mouth open.

"And I was always so sure of you!" were the words that came to him at last, with a hard little laugh at the end of them.

"Can you think it makes me love you less," she sobbed, "because I love him, too? Oh, Tommy, I thought you would be so glad!"

He kissed her; he put his hand fondly upon her head.

"I am glad," he said, with emotion. "When that which you want has come to you, Elspeth, how can I but be glad? But it takes me aback, and if for a moment I felt forlorn, if, when I should have been rejoicing only in your happiness, the selfish thought passed through my mind, 'What is to become of me?' I hope — I hope ——" Then he sat down and buried his face in the table.

And he might have been telling her about Grizel! Has the shock stunned you, Tommy? Elspeth thinks it has been a shock of pain. May we lift your head to show her your joyous face?

"*I am so proud,*" she was saying, "that at last,

after you have done so much for me, I can do a little thing for you. For it is something to free you, Tommy. You have always pretended, for my sake, that we could not do without each other, but we both knew all the time that it was only I who was unable to do without you. You can't deny it."

He might deny it, but it was true. Ah, Tommy, you bore with her with infinite patience, but did it never strike you that she kept you to the earth? If Elspeth could be happy without you! You were sure she could not, but if she could!—had that thought never made you flap your wings?

"I often had a pain at my heart," she told him, "which I kept from you. It was a feeling that your solicitude for me, perhaps, prevented your caring for any other woman. It seemed terrible and unnatural that I should be a bar to that. I felt that I was starving you, and not you only, but an unknown woman as well."

"So long as I had you, Elspeth," he said reproachfully, "was not that enough?"

"It seemed to be enough," she answered gravely, "but even while I comforted myself with that, I knew that it should not be enough, and still I feared that if it was, the blame was mine. Now I am no longer in the way, and I hope, so ardently, *that you* will fall in love, like other people. If *you* never do, I shall always have the fear that

I am the cause, that you lost the capacity in the days when I let you devote yourself too much to me."

Oh, blind Elspeth! Now is the time to tell her, Tommy, and fill her cup of happiness to the brim.

But it is she who is speaking still, almost gaily now, yet with a full heart. "What a time you have had with me, Tommy! I told David all about it, and what he has to look forward to, but he says he is not afraid. And when you find someone you can love," she continued sweetly, though she had a sigh to stifle, "I hope she will be someone quite unlike me, for oh, my dear, good brother, I know you need a change."

Not a word said Tommy.

She said, timidly, that she had begun to hope of late that Grizel might be the woman, and still he did not speak. He drew Elspeth closer to him, that she might not see his face and the horror of himself that surely sat on it. To the very marrow of him he was in such cold misery that I wonder his arms did not chill her.

This poor devil of a Sentimental Tommy! He had wakened up in the world of facts, where he thought he had been dwelling of late, to discover that he had not been here for weeks, except at meal-times. During those weeks he had most *honestly thought* that he was in a passion to be

married. What do you say to pitying instead of cursing him? It is a sudden idea of mine, and we must be quick, for joyous Grizel is drawing near, and this, you know, is the chapter in which her heart breaks.

It was Elspeth who opened the door to Grizel. "Does she know?" said Elspeth to herself, before either of them spoke.

"Does she know?" It was what Grizel was saying also.

"Oh, Elspeth, I am so glad! David has told me."

"She does know," Elspeth told herself, and she thought it was kind of Grizel to come so quickly. She said so.

"She doesn't know!" thought Grizel, and then these two kissed for the first time. It was a kiss of thanks from each.

"But why does she not know?" Grizel wondered a little as they entered the parlour, where Tommy was; he had been standing with his teeth knit since he heard the knock. As if in answer to the question, Elspeth said: "I have just broken it to Tommy. He has been in a few minutes only, and he is so surprised he can scarcely speak."

Grizel laughed happily, for that explained it. *Tommy* had not had time to tell her yet. She *laughed* again at Elspeth, who had thought she

had so much to tell and did not know half the story.

Elspeth begged Tommy to listen to the beautiful things Grizel was saying about David, but, truth to tell, Grizel scarcely heard them herself. She had given Tommy a shy, rapturous glance. She was wondering when he would begin. What a delicious opening when he shook hands! Suppose he had kissed her instead! Or, suppose he casually addressed her as darling! He might do it at any moment now! Just for once she would not mind though he did it in public. Perhaps as soon as this new remark of Elspeth's was finished, he meant to say: "You are not the only engaged person in the room, Miss Elspeth; I think I see another two!" Grizel laughed as if she had heard him say it. And then she ceased laughing suddenly, for some little duty had called Elspeth into the other room, and as she went out she stopped the movement of the earth.

These two were alone with their great joy.

Elspeth had said that she would be back in two minutes. Was Grizel wasting a moment when she looked only at him, her eyes filmy with love, the crooked smile upon her face so happy that it could not stand still? Her arms made a slight gesture towards him; her hands were open; she was giving herself to him. She could not see. For a fraction of time the space between them

seemed to be annihilated. His arms were closing round her. Then she knew that neither of them had moved.

"Grizel!"

He tried to be true to her by deceiving her. It was the only way. "At last, Grizel," he cried, "at last!" and he put joyousness into his voice. "It has all come right, dear one!" he cried like an ecstatic lover. Never in his life had he tried so hard to deceive at the sacrifice of himself. But he was fighting something as strong as the instinct of self-preservation, and his usually expressionless face gave the lie to his joyous words. Loud above his voice his ashen face was speaking to her, and she cried in terror, "What is wrong?" Even then he attempted to deceive her, but suddenly she knew the truth.

"You don't want to be married!"

I think the room swam round with her. When it was steady again, "You did not say that, did you?" she asked. She was sure he had not said it. She was smiling again tremulously to show him that he had not said it.

"I want to be married above all else on earth," he said imploringly; but his face betrayed him still, and she demanded the truth, and he was forced to tell it.

A little shiver passed through her, that was *all.*

you mean that you don't love me?" she
"You must tell me what you mean."
hat is how others would put it, I suppose,"
lied. "I believe they would be wrong. I
I love you in my own way; but I thought
d you in their way, and it is the only way
ounts in this world of theirs. It does not
to be my world. I was given wings, I think,
am never to know that I have left the earth
I come flop upon it with an arrow through
I crawl and wriggle here, and yet"—he
ed harshly—"I believe I am rather a fine
when I am flying!"
e nodded. "You mean you want me to let
off?" she asked. "You must tell me what
nean." And as he did not answer instantly,
ause I think I have some little claim upon
' she said, with a pleasant smile.
am as pitiful a puzzle to myself as I can be
u," he replied. "All I know is that I don't
to marry anyone. And yet I am sure I
die for you, Grizel."
was quite true. A burning house and Grizel
g the flames, and he would have been the
n the ladder. But there is no such luck for
Tommy.
You are free," was what she said. "Don't
so tragic," she added, again with the pleasant
. "It must be very distressing to you, but—

you will soon fly again." Her lips twitched tremulously. "I can't fly," she said.

She took the ring from her neck. She took it off its ribbon.

"I brought it," she said, "to let you put it on my finger. I thought you would want to do that," she said.

"Grizel," he cried, "can we not be as we have been?"

"No," she answered.

"It would all come right, Grizel. I am sure it would. I don't know why I am as I am; but I shall try to change myself. You have borne with me since we were children. Won't you bear with me for a little longer?"

She shook her head, but did not trust herself to speak.

"I have lost you," he said, and she nodded.

"Then I am lost indeed!" said he, and he knew it, too; but with a gesture of the hand she begged him not to say that.

"Without your love to help me ——" he began.

"You shall always have that," she told him with shining eyes, "always, always." And what could he do but look at her with the wonder and the awe that come to every man who, for one moment in his life, knows a woman well?

"You can love me still, Grizel!" His voice was shaky.

"Just the same," she answered, and I suppose he looked uplifted. "But you should be sorry," she said gravely, and it was then that Elspeth came back. She had not much exceeded her two minutes.

It was always terrible to Tommy not to have the feelings of a hero. At that moment he could not endure it. In a splendid burst of self-sacrifice he suddenly startled both Grizel and himself by crying, "Elspeth, I love Grizel, and I have just asked her to be my wife."

Yes, the nobility of it amazed himself, but bewitched him, too, and he turned gloriously to Grizel, never doubting but that she would have him still.

He need not have spoken so impulsively, nor looked so grand. She swayed for an instant and then was erect again. "You must forgive me, Elspeth," she said, "but I have refused him"; and that was the biggest surprise Tommy ever got in his life.

"You don't care for him!" Elspeth blurted out.

"Not in the way he cares for me," Grizel replied quietly, and when Elspeth would have said more she begged her to desist. "The only thing for me to do now, Elspeth," she said, smiling, "is to run away, but I want you first to accept a little wedding-gift from me. I wish you and David so *much happiness; you* won't refuse it, will you?"

Elspeth, still astounded, took the gift. It was a little garnet ring.

"It will have to be cut," Grizel said "It was meant, I think, for a larger finger. I have had it some time, but I never wore it."

Elspeth said she would always treasure her ring, and that it was beautiful.

"I used to think it — rather sweet," Grizel admitted, and then she said good-bye to them both and went away.

CHAPTER XXIV

THE MONSTER

TOMMY'S new character was that of a monster. He always liked the big parts.

Concealed, as usual, in the garments that clung so oddly to him, modesty, generosity, indifference to applause and all the nobler impulses, he could not strip himself of them, try as he would, and so he found, to his scornful amusement, that he still escaped the public fury. In the two months that preceded Elspeth's marriage there was positively scarce a soul in Thrums who did not think rather well of him. "If they knew what I really am," he cried with splendid bitterness, "how they would run from me!"

Even David could no longer withhold the hand of fellowship, for Grizel would tell him nothing, except that, after all, and for reasons sufficient to herself, she had declined to become Mrs. Sandys. He sought in vain to discover how Tommy could be to blame. "And now," Tommy said grimly to Grizel, "our doctor thinks you have used me *badly, and that I am* a fine fellow to bear no resent-

ment! Elspeth told me that he admires the gentle and manly dignity with which I submit to the blow, and I have no doubt that, as soon as I heard that, I made it more gentle and manly than ever!

"I have forbidden Elspeth," he told her, "to upbraid you for not accepting me, with the result that she thinks me too good to live! Ha, ha! what do you think, Grizel?"

It became known in the town that she had refused him. Everybody was on Tommy's side. They said she had treated him badly. Even Aaron was staggered at the sight of Tommy accepting his double defeat in such good part. "And all the time I am the greatest cur unhung," says Tommy. "Why don't you laugh, Grizel?"

Never, they said, had there been such a generous brother. The town was astir about this poor man's gifts to the lucky bride. There were rumours that among the articles was a silver coal-scuttle, but it proved to be a sugar-bowl in that pattern. Three bandboxes came for her to select from; somebody discovered who was on the watch, but may I be struck dead if more than one went back. Yesterday it was bonnets; to-day she is at Tilliedrum again, trying on her going-away dress. And she really was to go away in it, a noticeable thing, for in Thrums society, though they usually get a *going*-away dress, they are too canny to go away *in it*. The local shops were not ignored, but the

best of the trousseau came from London. "That makes the second box this week, as I 'm a living sinner," cries the lady on the watch again. When boxes arrived at the station Corp wheeled them up to Elspeth without so much as looking at the label.

Ah, what a brother! They said it openly to their own brothers, and to Tommy in the way they looked at him.

"There has been nothing like it," he assured Grizel, "since Red Riding-hood and the wolf. Why can't I fling off my disguise and cry, 'The better to eat you with!'"

He always spoke to her now in this vein of magnificent bitterness, but Grizel seldom rewarded him by crying, "Oh, oh!" She might, however, give him a patient, reproachful glance instead, and it had the irritating effect of making him feel that perhaps he was under life-size, instead of over it.

"I daresay you are right," says Tommy, savagely.

"I said nothing."

"You don't need to say it. What a grand capacity you have for knocking me off my horse, Grizel!"

"Are you angry with me for that?"

"No; it is delicious to pick one's self out of the mud, especially when you find it is a baby you are picking up, instead of a brute. Am I a baby only, *Grizel?*"

"I think it is childish of you," she repl
say you are a brute."

"There is not to be even that satisfacti
me! You are hard on me, Grizel."

"I am trying to help you. How can
angry with me?"

"The instinct of self-preservation, I sup
see myself dwindling so rapidly under yo
ment that soon there will be nothing of m

It was said cruelly, for he knew that
thing Grizel could not bear now was the
tion that she saw his faults only. She alw
down under that blow with pitiful surrend
ing the woman suddenly, as if under a
knouting.

He apologized contritely. "But, afte
proves my case," he said, "for I could
you in this way, Grizel, if I were not
well-grown specimen of a monster."

"Don't," she said; but she did not seek
him by drawing him away to other subject
would have been his way. "What is th
serous," she asked, "in your being so goo
speth? It is very kind of you to give
these things."

"Especially when by rights they ar
Grizel!"

"No, not when you did not want to gi
to me."

He dared say nothing to that; there were some matters on which he must not contradict Grizel now.

"It is nice of you," she said, "not to complain, though Elspeth is deserting you. It must have been a blow."

"You and I only know why," he answered. "But for her, Grizel, I might be whining sentiment to you at this moment."

"That," she said, "would be the monstrous thing."

"And it is not monstrous, I suppose, that I should let Gemmell press my hand under the conviction that, after all, I am a trump."

"You don't pose as one."

"That makes them think the more highly of me! Nothing monstrous, Grizel, in my standing quietly by while you are showing Elspeth how to furnish her house—I, who know why you have the subject at your finger-tips!"

For Grizel had given all her sweet ideas to Elspeth. Heigh-ho! how she had guarded them once, confiding them half reluctantly even to Tommy; half reluctantly, that is, at the start, because they were her very own, but once she was embarked on the subject talking with such rapture that every minute or two he had to beg her to be calm. She was the first person in that part of *the world to think* that old furniture need not be

kept in the dark corners, and she knew where there was an oak bedstead that was looked upon as a disgrace, and where to obtain the dearest cupboards, one of them in use as the retiring-chamber of a rabbit-hutch, and stately clocks made in the town a hundred years ago, and quaint old-farrant lamps and cogeys and sand-glasses that apologized if you looked at them, and yet were as willing to be loved again as any old lady in a mutch. You will not buy them easily now, the people will not chuckle at you when you bid for them now. We have become so cute in Thrums that when the fender breaks we think it may have increased in value, and we preserve any old board lest the worms have made it artistic. Grizel, however, was in advance of her time. She could lay her hands on all she wanted, and she did, but it was for Elspeth's house.

"And the table-cloths and the towels and the sheets," said Tommy. "Nothing monstrous in my letting you give Elspeth them?"

The linen, you see, was no longer in Grizel's press.

"I could not help making them," she answered, "they were so longing to be made. I did not mean to give them to her. I think I meant to put them back in the press, but when they were made *it was* natural that they should want to have *something* to do. So I gave them to Elspeth."

"With how many tears on them?"

"Not many. But with some kisses."

"All which," says Tommy, "goes to prove that I have nothing with which to reproach myself!"

"No, I never said that," she told him. "You have to reproach yourself with wanting me to love you."

She paused a moment to let him say, if he dared, that he had not done that, when she would have replied instantly, "You know you did." He could have disabused her, but it would have been cruel, and so on this subject, as ever, he remained silent.

"But that is not what I have been trying to prove," she continued. "You know as well as I that the cause of this unhappiness has been — what you call your wings."

He was about to thank her for her delicacy in avoiding its real name, when she added, "I mean your sentiment," and he laughed instead.

"I flatter myself that I no longer fly, at all events," he said. "I know what I am at last, Grizel."

"It is flattery only," she replied with her old directness. "This thing you are regarding with a morbid satisfaction is not you at all."

He groaned. "Which of them all is me, Grizel?" he asked gloomily.

"We shall see," she said, "when we have got the wings off."

"They will have to come off a feather at a tim

"That," she declared, "is what I have be trying to prove."

"It will be a weary task, Grizel."

"I won't weary at it," she said, smiling.

Her cheerfulness was a continual surprise to h "You bear up wonderfully well yourself," he so times said to her, almost reproachfully, and never replied that, perhaps, that was one of ways of trying to help him.

She is not so heartbroken, after all, you ma saying, and I had promised to break her h But, honestly, I don't know how to do it n thoroughly, and you must remember that we h not seen her alone yet.

She tried to be very little alone. She he David in his work more than ever; not a pe for instance, managed to escape the bath bec Grizel's heart was broken. You could neve that she was alone when her needle was g and the linen became sheets and the like, in was probably record time. Yet they could h been sewn more quickly; for at times the ne stopped and she did not know it. Once a ridden old woman, with whom she had been ting up, lay watching her instead of sleeping, finally said: "What makes you sit staring cauld fire, and speaking to yoursel'?" And t was a strange day when she had been too lor

Den. When she started for home she went the direction of Double Dykes, her old home, stead.

She could bear everything except doubt. She d told him so, when he wondered at her calmss; she often said it to herself. She could tread y path, however drearily it stretched before her, long as she knew whither it led, but there could no more doubt. Oh, he must never again disarb her mind with hope! How clearly she showed im that, and yet they had perhaps no more than arted when it seemed impossible to bear for the ext hour the desolation she was sentenced to for ife. She lay quivering and tossing on the hearthug of the parlour, beating it with her fists, rocking er arms, and calling to him to give her doubt gain, that she might get through the days.

"Let me doubt again!" Here was Grizel starting to beg it of him. More than once she got half-way to Aaron's house before she could turn; but she always did turn, with the words unspoken; never did Tommy hear her say them, but always that she was tranquil now. Was it pride that supported her in the trying hour? Oh, no, it was not pride. That is an old garment, which once became Grizel well, but she does not wear it now; she takes it out of the closet, perhaps, at times to look at it. What gave her strength when he was by was her promise to help

him It was not by asking for leave to dream herself that she could make him dream the less. All done for you, Tommy! It might have helped you to loosen a few of the feathers.

Sometimes she thought it might not be Tommy, but herself, who was so unlike other people; that it was not he who was unable to love, but she who could not be loved. This idea did not agitate her as a terrible thing; she could almost welcome it. But she did not go to him with it. While it might be but a fancy, that was no way to help a man who was overfull of them. It was the bare truth only that she wanted him to see, and so she made elaborate inquiries into herself, to discover whether she was quite unlovable. I suppose it would have been quaint, had she not been quite so much in earnest. She examined herself in the long mirror most conscientiously, and with a determinedly open mind, to see whether she was too ugly for any man to love. Our beautiful Grizel really did.

She had always thought that she was a nice girl, but was she? No one had ever loved her, except the old doctor, and he began when she was so young that perhaps he had been inveigled into it, like a father. Even David had not loved her. Was it because he knew her so well? What was *it in* women that made men love them? She *asked it of* David in such a way that he never

she was putting him to the question. He
y thought that he and she were having a
ınt chat about Elspeth, and, as a result, she
ed that he loved Elspeth because she was so
ess. His head sat with uncommon pride on
ıoulders while he talked of Elspeth's timidity.
e was a ring of boastfulness in his voice as
ıraded the large number of useful things that
th could not do. And yet David was a sen-
and careful man.

as it helplessness that man loved in woman,
? It seemed to be Elspeth's helplessness that
nade Tommy such a brother, and how it had
ys appealed to Aaron! No woman could be
elpless than herself, Grizel knew. She thought
and back, and she could not come to a time
she was not managing somebody. Women,
eflected, fall more or less deeply in love with
baby they see, while men, even the best of
, can look calmly at other people's babies.
when the helplessness of the child is in the
an, then other women are unmoved; but the
heart of man is stirred — woman is his baby.
remembered that the language of love is in
sexes — for the woman superlatives, for the
diminutives. The more she loves the bigger
rows, but in an ecstasy he could put her in his
et. Had not Tommy taught her this? His
one, his child! Perhaps he really had loved

her in the days when they both made be
she was infantile; but soon she had sh
fatal clearness that she was not. Instead
ing to be taken care of, she had obviousl
to take care of him: their positions were
Perhaps, said Grizel to herself, I should l
a man.

If this was the true explanation, the
Tommy, who had tried so hard, could
her, he might be able to love — what is th
— a more womanly woman, or, mor
phrase still, a very woman. Some oth
might be the right wife for him. She
shrink from considering this theory, and
sidered so long that I, for one, cannot sn
for deciding ultimately, as she did, that
nothing in it.

The strong like to be leaned upon and
to lean, and this irrespective of sex. Th
solution she woke up with one morni
seemed to explain not only David's and
love, but her own, so clearly that in he
help she put it before Tommy. It im
she cared for him because he was wea
drew a very long face.

"You don't know how the feathers hu
come out," he explained.

"But so long as we do get them out!"

"Every other person who knows me t

strength is my great characteristic," he maintained, rather querulously.

"But when you know it is not," said Grizel. "You do know, don't you?" she asked anxiously. "To know the truth about one's self, that is the beginning of being strong."

"You seem determined," he retorted, "to prevent my loving you."

"Why?" she asked.

"You are to make me strong in spite of myself, I understand. But, according to your theory, the strong love the weak only. Are you to grow weak, Grizel, as I grow strong?"

She had not thought of that, and she would have liked to rock her arms. But she was able to reply: "I am not trying to help you in order to make you love me; you know, quite well, that all that is over and done with. I am trying only to help you to be what a man should be."

She could say that to him, but to herself? Was she prepared to make a man of him at the cost of his possible love? This faced her when she was alone with her passionate nature, and she fought it, and with her fists clenched she cried: "Yes, yes, yes!"

Do we know all that Grizel had to fight? There were times when Tommy's mind wandered to excuses for himself; he knew what men were, *and he shuddered to* think of the might have been,

had a girl who could love as Grizel di
such a man as her father. He thanked his
did Tommy, that he, who was made as th
men, had avoided raising passions in her.
der how he was so sure. Do we know
Grizel had to fight?

They spoke much during those day
coming parting, and she always said that s
bear it if she saw him go away more of a
he had come.

"Then anything I have suffered or ma
she told him, "will have been done to h
and perhaps in time that will make me
my poor little love-story. It would be ra
ful, would it not, if I have gone through
for no end at all?"

She spoke, he said, almost reproach
if she thought he might go away on h
after all.

"We can't be sure," she murmured, sh
eager to make him watchful.

"Yes," he said, humbly but firmly, "I
a scoundrel, Grizel, I am a scoundrel,
thing you may be sure of, I am done w
ment." But even as he said it, even a
that he could tear himself asunder for beir
to Grizel, a bird was singing at his heart
he was free again, free to go out into tl

lay as if it were but a larger den. Ah, if Tommy could always have remained a boy! peth's marriage day came round, and I should o linger in it, and show you Elspeth in her ng-gown, and Tommy standing behind to her if she fainted, and Ailie weeping, and n Latta rubbing his gleeful hands, and a ng bridesmaid who had once thought she t be a bride. But that was a day in Elspeth's not in Tommy's and Grizel's. Only one in- t in their story crept into that happy day. e were speeches at the feast, and the Rev. Dishart referred to Tommy in the kindliest called him "my young friend," quoted (inac- ely) from his book, and expressed an opinion, d, he might say, when Mr. Sandys was a lad ool (cheers), that he had a career before him. my bore it well, all except the quotation, n he was burning to correct, but sighed to find t had set the dominies on his left talking about city. "To produce such a graybeard of a at two and twenty, Mr. Sandys," said Cathro, mazing. It partakes, sir, of the nature of the ulous; it 's onchancey, by which we mean a tion from the normal." And so on. To es- this kind of flattery (he had so often heard it by ladies, who could say it so much better), my turned to his neighbours on the right. ldly enough, they also were discussing devia-

tions from the normal. On the table was a pl in full flower, and Ailie, who had lent it, was pressing surprise that it should bloom so late in season.

"So early in its life, I should rather say," doctor remarked after examining it. "It i young plant, and in the ordinary course would have come to flower before next year. But afraid that it will never see next year. It is on those poor little plants that bloom prematu because they are diseased."

Tommy was a little startled. He had c marvelled over his own precocity, but never gue that this might be the explanation why he wa flower at twenty-two. "Is that a scientific fa he asked.

"It is a law of nature," the doctor re gravely, and if anything more was said on the ject our Tommy did not hear it. What di hear? He was a child again, in miserable l ings, and it was sometime in the long middl the night, and what he heard from his bed wa mother coughing away her life in hers. T was an angry knock, knock, knock, from s where near, and he crept out of bed to tel mother that the people through the wall were c plaining because she would not die more qui but when he reached her bed it was not his mc *he saw lying* there, but himself, aged twenty

thereabouts. For Tommy had inherited his ther's cough; he had known it every winter, he remembered it as if for the first time w.

Did he hear anything else? I think he heard s wings slipping to the floor.

He asked Ailie to give him the plant, and he pt it in his room very lovingly, though he for- t to water it. He sat for long periods looking it, and his thoughts were very deep, but all he tually said aloud was, "There are two of us." aron sometimes saw them together, and thought ey were an odd pair, and perhaps they were.

Tommy did not tell Grizel of the tragedy that as hanging over him. He was determined to ve her that pain. He knew that most men in is position would have told her, and was glad to nd that he could keep it so gallantly to himself. he was brave; perhaps some day she would dis- over that he had been brave also. When she lked of wings now, what he seemed to see was a reen grave. His eyes were moist, but he held his ead high. All this helped him.

Ah, well, but the world must jog along though ou and I be damned. Elspeth was happily mar- d, and there came the day when Tommy and rizel must say good-bye. He was returning to ondon. His luggage was already in Corp's bar- w, all but the insignificant part of it, which yet

made a bulky package in its author's pocket, for it was his new manuscript, for which he would have fought a regiment, yes, and beaten them. Little cared Tommy what became of the rest of his luggage so long as that palpitating package was safe.

"And little you care," Grizel said, in a moment of sudden bitterness, "whom you leave behind, so long as you take it with you."

He forgave her with a sad smile. She did not know, you see, that this manuscript might be his last.

And it was the only bitter thing she said. Even when he looked very sorry for her, she took advantage of his emotion to help him only. "Don't be too sorry for me," she said calmly; "remember, rather, that there is one episode in a woman's life to which she must always cling in memory, whether it was a pride to her or a shame, and that it rests with you to make mine proud or shameful."

In other words, he was to get rid of his wings. How she harped on that!

He wanted to kiss her on the brow, but she would not have it. He was about to do it, not to gratify any selfish desire, but of a beautiful impulse that if anything happened she would have *this to* remember as the last of him. But she drew *back* almost angrily. Positively, she was putting

own to sentiment, and he forgave her even

ut she kissed the manuscript. "Wish it luck," had begged of her; "you were always so fond babies, and this is my baby." So Grizel kissed mmy's baby, and then she turned away her face.

CHAPTER XXV

MR. T. SANDYS HAS RETURNED TO TOWN

IT is disquieting to reflect that we have devoted so much paper (this is the third shilling's worth) to telling what a real biographer would almost certainly have summed up in a few pages. "Caring nothing for glory, engrossed in his work alone, Mr. Sandys, soon after the publication of the 'Letters,' sought the peace of his mother's native village, and there, alike undisturbing and undisturbed, he gave his life, as ever, to laborious days and quiet contemplation. The one vital fact in these six months of lofty endeavour is that he was making progress with the new book. Fishing and other distractions were occasionally indulged in, but merely that he might rise fresher next morning to a book which absorbed," etc.

One can see exactly how it should be done, it has been done so often before. And there is a deal to be said for this method. His book was what he had been at during nearly the whole of that time; *comparatively* speaking, the fishing and "other *distractions*" (a neat phrase) had got an occasional hour

y. But while we admire, we can't do it in that y. We seem fated to go on taking it for granted at you know the "vital facts" about Tommy, d devoting our attention to the things that the al biographer leaves out.

Tommy arrived in London with little more than n pounds in his pockets. All the rest he had ent on Elspeth.

He looked for furnished chambers in a fashion- le quarter, and they were much too expensive. ut the young lady who showed them to him sked if it was *the* Mr. Sandys, and he at once took he rooms. Her mother subsequently said that she nderstood he wrote books, and would he deposit ve pounds?

Such are the ups and downs of the literary alling.

The book, of course, was "Unrequited Love," nd the true story of how it was not given to the world by his first publishers has never been told. They had the chance, but they weighed the manuscript in their hands as if it were butter, and said it was very small.

"If you knew how much time I have spent in making it smaller," replied Tommy, haughtily.

The madmen asked if he could not add a few chapters, whereupon, with a shudder, he tucked baby under his wing and flew away. That is how Goldie & Goldie got the book.

For one who had left London a glittering it was wonderful how little he brightened it by turning. At the club they did not know that had been away. In society they seemed to h forgotten to expect him back.

He had an eye for them — with a touch of in it; but he bided his time. It was one of terrible things about Tommy that he could his time. Pym was the only person he called u He took Pym out to dinner and conducted home again. His kindness to Pym, the deli with which he pretended not to see that poo Pym was degraded and done for — they w have been pretty even in a woman, and we Tommy unfairly in passing them by with a

Pym had the manuscript to read, and you be as sure he kept sober that night as that To lay awake. For when literature had to be ju who could be so grim a critic as this us lenient toper? He could forgive much, Pym. You had run away without paying rent, was it? Well, well, come in and ha drink. Broken your wife's heart, have you? chap, but you will soon get over it. But if i a split infinitive, "Go to the devil, sir."

"Into a cocked hat," was the verdict of meaning thereby that thus did Tommy's se work beat his first. Tommy broke down wept.

Presently Pym waxed sentimental and confided to Tommy that he, too, had once loved in vain. The sad case of those who love in vain, you remember, is the subject of the book. The saddest of autobiographies, it has been called.

An odd thing, this, I think. Tearing home (for the more he was engrossed in mind the quicker he walked), Tommy was not revelling in Pym's praise; he was neither blanching nor smiling at the thought that he of all people had written as one who was unloved; he was not wondering what Grizel would say to it; he had even forgotten to laugh over his own coming dissolution (indeed, about this time the flower-pot began to fade from his memory). What made him cut his way so excitedly through the streets was this: Pym had questioned his use of the word "untimely" in chapter eight. And Tommy had always been uneasy about that word.

He glared at every person he passed, and ran into perambulators. He rushed past his chambers like one who no longer had a home. He was in the park now, and did not even notice that the Row was empty, that mighty round a deserted circus; management, riders, clowns, all the performers gone on their provincial tour, or nearly all, for a lady on horseback sees him, remembers to some extent who he is, and gives chase. It is our dear Mrs. Jerry.

"You wretch," she said, "to compel i
sue you! Nothing could have induced
anything so unwomanly except that y
only man in town."

She shook her whip so prettily at h
was as seductive as a smile. It was alsc
gaining time while she tried to rememb
was he was famous for.

"I believe you don't know me!" she
a little shriek, for Tommy had looked b
"That would be too mortifying. Pleas
you do!"

Her look of appeal, the way in whic
her plump little hands together, as if ab
her prayers, brought it all back to Tom
one thing he was not certain of was whet
proposed to her.

It was the one thing of which she w

"You think I can forget so soon," l
reproachfully, but carefully.

"Then tell me my name," said she; sh
it might lead to his mentioning his own.

"I don't know what it is now. It
Jerry once."

"It is Mrs. Jerry still."

"Then you did not marry him, after a

No wild joy had surged to his face, but
answered yes, he nodded his head wi
melancholy three times. He had not th

sire to deceive the lady; he was simply an actor who had got his cue and liked his part.

"But my friends still call me Mrs. Jerry," she said softly. "I suppose it suits me somehow."

"You will always be Mrs. Jerry to me," he replied huskily. Ah, those meetings with old loves!

"If you minded so much," Mrs. Jerry said, a little tremulously (she had the softest heart, though her memory was a trifle defective), "you might have discovered whether I had married him or not."

"Was there no reason why I should not seek to discover it?" Tommy asked with tremendous irony, but not knowing in the least what he meant.

It confused Mrs. Jerry. They always confused her when they were fierce, and yet she liked them to be fierce when she re-met them, so few of them were.

But she said the proper thing. "I am glad you have got over it."

Tommy maintained a masterly silence. No wonder he was a power with women.

"I say I am glad you have got over it," murmured Mrs. Jerry again. Has it ever been noticed that the proper remark does not always gain in propriety with repetition?

It is splendid to know that right feeling still kept Tommy silent.

Yet she went on briskly as if he had told her

something: "Am I detaining you? You
walking so quickly that I thought you wer
pursuit of someone."

It brought Tommy back to earth, and he
accept her now as an old friend he was gl
meet again. "You could not guess what I
pursuit of, Mrs. Jerry," he assured her, and
confidence, for words are not usually chased
the Row.

But, though he made the sound of laughte
terrible face which Mrs. Jerry remembered sc
but could not give a name to, took no part
revelry; he was as puzzling to her as those
ing authors who print their jokes without a n
exclamation at the end of them. Poor Mrs.
thought it must be a laugh of horrid bitterne
that he was referring to his dead self or som
dreadful of that sort, for which she was respo

"Please don't tell me," she said, in such ob
alarm that again he laughed that awful
He promised, with a profound sigh, to car
secret unspoken to the grave, also to come
"At Home" if she sent him a card.

He told her his address, but not his nam
she could not send the card to "Occupier."

"Now tell me about yourself," said Mrs.
with charming cunning. "Did you go awa

"I came back a few days ago only."

"Had you any shooting?" (They

ays threatened to make for a distant land where re was big game.)

Tommy smiled. He had never "had any ooting" except once in his boyhood, when he d Corp acted as beaters, and he had wept pas- nately over the first bird killed, and harangued e murderer.

"No," he replied; "I was at work all the time."

This, at least, told her that his work was of a ind which could be done out of London. An ventor?

"When are we to see the result?" asked artful Mrs. Jerry.

"Very soon. Everything comes out about this ime. It is our season, you know."

Mrs. Jerry pondered while she said: "How too ntrancing!" What did come out this month? Oh, plays! And whose season was it? The tor's, of course! He could not be an actor with at beard, but — ah, she remembered now!

"Are they really clever this time?" she asked guishly — "for you must admit that they are ually sticks."

Tommy blinked at this. "I really believe, Mrs. Jerry," he said slowly, "it is you who don't now who I am!"

"You prepare the aristocracy for the stage, don't ou?" she said plaintively.

"I!" he thundered.

"He had a beard," she said, in self-defence.

"Who?"

"Oh, I don't know! Please forgive me! do remember, of course, who you are — I reme ber too well!" said Mrs. Jerry, generously.

"What is my name?" Tommy demanded.

She put her hands together again, beseeching "Please, please!" she said. "I have such dreadful memory for names, but — oh, please!"

"What am I?" he insisted.

"You are the — the man who invents those lightful thingumbobs," she cried with an insp tion.

"I never invented anything, except two boo said Tommy, looking at her reproachfully.

"I know them by heart," she cried.

"One of them is not published yet," he infor her.

"I am looking forward to it so excitedly," said at once.

"And my name is Sandys," said he.

"Thomas Sandys," she said, correcting triumphantly. "How is that dear, darling l Agnes — Elspeth?"

"You have me at last," he admitted.

"'Sandys on Woman!'" exclaimed Mrs. J all rippling smiles once more. "Can I ever get it!"

"I shall never pretend to know anything a

men again," Tommy answered dolefully, but with a creditable absence of vindictiveness.

"Please, please!" said the little hands again.

"It is a nasty jar, Mrs. Jerry."

"Please!"

"Oh that I could forget so quickly!"

"Please!"

"I forgive you, if that is what you want."

She waved her whip. "And you will come and see me?"

"When I have got over this. It needs—a little time." He really said this to please her.

"You shall talk to me of the new book," she said, confident that this would fetch him, for he was not her first author. "By the way, what is it about?"

"Can you ask, Mrs. Jerry?" replied Tommy, passionately. "Oh, woman, woman, can you ask?"

This puzzled her at the time, but she understood what he had meant when the book came out, dedicated to Pym. "Goodness gracious!" she said to herself as she went from chapter to chapter, and she was very self-conscious when she heard the book discussed in society, which was not quite as soon as it came out, for at first the ladies seemed to have forgotten their Tommy.

But the journals made ample amends. He had invented, they *said*, something new in literature, a

story that was yet not a story, told in the essays which were no mere essays. Ther character mentioned by name, there was n of dialogue, essays only, they might say, net result, yet a human heart was laid l surely that was fiction in its highest form. founded on fact, no doubt (for it would b like to deny that such a work must be come of a painful personal experience) those wise and penetrating pages Mr. Sand no one's attention to himself; his subjec experience common to humanity, to be b way or that; and without vainglory he how it should be borne, so that those lool the deep waters of the book (made cle pellucid style) might see, not the author, l selves.

A few of the critics said that if the boc nothing to his reputation, it detracted noth it, but probably their pen added this mec when they were away. What annoyed h was the two or three who stated that, muc liked "Unrequited Love," they liked the ' still better. He could not endure hearin word said for the "Letters" now.

The great public, I believe, always the "Letters," but among important secti the new book was a delight, and for va *sons.* For instance, it was no mere stor

got the thoughtful public. Its style, again, got the public which knows it is the only public that counts.

Society still held aloof (there was an African traveller on view that year), but otherwise everything was going on well, when the bolt came, as ever, from the quarter whence it was least expected. It came in a letter from Grizel, so direct as to be almost as direct as this: "I think it is a horrid book. The more beautifully it is written the more horrid it seems. No one was ever loved more truly than you. You can know nothing about unrequited love. Then why do you pretend to know? I see why you always avoided telling me anything about the book, even its title. It was because you knew what I should say. It is nothing but sentiment. You were on your wings all the time you were writing it. That is why you could treat me as you did. Even to the last moment you deceived me. I suppose you deceived yourself also. Had I known what was in the manuscript I would not have kissed it, I would have asked you to burn it. Had you not had the strength, and you would not, I should have burned it for you. It would have been a proof of my love. I have ceased to care whether you are a famous man or not. I want you to be a real man. But you will not let me help you. I have *cried all day.* GRIZEL."

Fury. Dejection. The heroic. They came in that order.

"This is too much!" he cried at first. "I can stand a good deal, Grizel, but there was once a worm that turned at last, you know. Take care, madam, take care. Oh, but you are a charming lady; you can decide everything for everybody, can't you! What delicious letters you write, something unexpected in everyone of them! There are poor dogs of men, Grizel, who open their letters from their loves knowing exactly what will be inside — words of cheer, words of love, of confidence, of admiration, which help them as they sit into the night at their work, fighting for fame that they may lay it at their loved one's feet. Discouragement, obloquy, scorn, they get in plenty from others, but they are always sure of her, — do you hear, my original Grizel? — those other dogs are always sure of her. Hurrah! Grizel, I was happy, I was actually honoured, it was helping me to do better and better, when you quickly put an end to all that. Hurrah, hurrah!"

I feel rather sorry for him. If he had not told her about his book it was because she did not and never could understand what compels a man to write one book instead of another. "I had no say in the matter; the thing demanded of me that I should do it, and I had to do it. Some must *write from* their own experience, they can make

nothing of anything else; but it is to me like a chariot that won't budge; I have to assume a character, Grizel, and then away we go. I don't attempt to explain how I write, I hate to discuss it; all I know is that those who know how it should be done can never do it. London is overrun with such, and everyone of them is as cock-sure as you. You have taken everything else, Grizel; surely you might leave me my books."

Yes, everything else, or nearly so. He put upon the table all the feathers he had extracted since his return to London, and they did make some little show, if less than it seemed to him. That little adventure in the park; well, if it started wrongly, it but helped to show the change in him, for he had determinedly kept away from Mrs. Jerry's house. He had met her once since the book came out, and she had blushed exquisitely when referring to it, and said: "How you have suffered! I blame myself dreadfully." Yes, and there was an unoccupied sofa near by, and he had not sat down on it with her and continued the conversation. Was not that a feather? And there were other ladies, and, without going into particulars, they were several feathers between them. How doggedly, to punish himself, he had stuck to the company of men, a sex that never interested *him!*

"But all that is nothing. I am beyond the p
I did so monstrous a thing that I must die fo
What was this dreadful thing? When I saw
with that glove I knew you loved me, and
you thought I loved you, and I had not the l
to dash your joy. You don't know it; but
was the crime for which I must be extermin
fiend that I am!"

Gusts of fury came at intervals all the mor
He wrote her appalling letters and destroyed t
He shook his fist and snapped his fingers at
and went out for drink (having none in the ho
and called a hansom to take him to Mrs. Je
and tore round the park again and glared at e
body. He rushed on and on. "But the
thing you shall never do, Grizel, is to inte
with my work; I swear it, do you hear? I
else I am yours to mangle at your will, but t
it, and I am a beast at bay."

And still saying such things, he drew nea
publishing offices of Goldie & Goldie, and ci
round them, less like a beast at bay than a
that is taking a long way to its nest. And
four of the afternoon what does this odd be
bird or fish do but stalk into Goldie & Gc
and order "Unrequited Love" to be withc
from circulation.

"Madam, I have carried out your wishes
the man is hanged."

Not thus, but in words to that effect, did Tommy announce his deed to Grizel.

"I think you have done the right thing," she wrote back, "and I admire you for it." But he thought she did not admire him sufficiently for it, and he did not answer her letter, so it was the last that passed between them.

Such is the true explanation (now first published) of an affair that at the time created no small stir. "Why withdraw the book?" Goldie & Goldie asked of Tommy, but he would give no reason. "Why?" the public asked of Goldie & Goldie, and they had to invent several. The public invented the others. The silliest were those you could know only by belonging to a club.

I swear that Tommy had not foreseen the result. Quite unwittingly the favoured of the gods had found a way again. The talk about his incomprehensible action was the turning-point in the fortunes of the book. There were already a few thousand copies in circulation, and now many thousand people wanted them. Sandys, Sandys, Sandys! where had the ladies heard that name before? Society woke up, Sandys was again its hero; the traveller had to go lecturing in the provinces.

The ladies! Yes, and their friends, the men. There was a Tommy society in Mayfair that winter, nearly all of the members eminent or beautiful, *and they held* each other's hands. Both sexes

were eligible, married or single, and the one was something about sympathy. It afterward came the Souls, but those in the know still them the Tommies.

They blackballed Mrs. Jerry (she was plump), but her married stepdaughter, Lady pinworth (who had been a Miss Ridge-Fu was one of them. Indeed, the Ridge-Fulto among the thinnest families in the country.

T. Sandys was invited to join the society declined, and thus never quite knew what the nor can any outsider know, there being a r tion among the Tommies against telling. lieve, however, that they were a brotherhood sisters. You had to pass an examination in quited love, showing how you had suffered after that either the men or the women (I which) dressed in white to the throat, and each got some other's old love's hand to hol you all sat on the floor and thought hard. may have been even more in it than this, fo got to know Tommies at sight by a sort of worn halo round the brow, and it is said th House of Commons was several times counted out because so many of its middle members were holding the floor in another

Of course there were also the Anti-Tom who called themselves (rather vulgarly) the mies. Many of them were that shape. The

hat, though you had loved in vain, it was no such nighty matter to boast of; but they were poor in rgument, and their only really strong card was hat Mr. Sandys was stoutish himself.

Their organs in the press said that he was a man of true genius, and slightly inclined to *embonpoint.*

This maddened him, but on the whole his return was a triumph, and despite thoughts of Grizel he was very, very happy, for he was at play again. He was a boy, and all the ladies were girls. Perhaps the lady he saw most frequently was Mrs. Jerry's stepdaughter. Lady Pippinworth was a friend of Lady Rintoul, and had several times visited her at the Spittal, but that was not the sole reason why Tommy so frequently drank tea with her. They had met first at a country house, where, one night after the ladies had retired to rest, Lady Pippinworth came stealing into the smoking-room with the tidings that there were burglars in the house. As she approached her room she had heard whispers, and then, her door being ajar, she had peeped upon the miscreants. She had also seen a pile of her jewellery on the table, and a pistol keeping guard on top of it. There were several men in the house, but that pistol cowed all of them save Tommy. "If we could lock them in!" someone suggested, but the key was on the wrong side of the door. "I shall put it on the right side," Tommy said *pluckily, "if* you others will prevent their

escaping by the window"; and with cha
courage he set off for her Ladyship's room
tention was to insert his hand, whip out th
lock the door on the outside, á sufficient
ous enterprise; but what does he do
Locks the door on the inside, and go
burglars with his fists! A happy recol
Corp's famous one from the shoulder d
once of the man who had seized the pi
the other gentleman Tommy had a stan
in which both of them took and gave,
support arrived, one burglar was sensel
floor and T. Sandys was sitting on
Courageous of Tommy, was it not? Bu
the end. He was left in the dining-roo
charge of his captives until morning, an
by he was exhorting them in such noble
to mend their ways that they took the n
him, and so touching were their family
that Tommy wept and untied their
showed them out at the front door and
ten shillings each, and the one who begg
honour of shaking hands with him also
watch. Thus did Tommy and Lady Pi
become friends, but it was not this that
so often to her house to tea. She was a
woman, with a reputation for having bro
hearts without damaging her own. He
an interesting case.

CHAPTER XXVI

GRIZEL ALL ALONE

It was Tommy who was the favoured of the gods, you remember, not Grizel.

Elspeth wondered to see her, after the publication of that book, looking much as usual. "You know how he loved you now," she said, perhaps a little reproachfully.

"Yes," Grizel answered, "I know; I knew before the book came out."

"You must be sorry for him?"

Grizel nodded.

"But proud of him also," Elspeth said. "You have a right to be proud."

"I am as proud," Grizel replied, "as I have a right to be."

Something in her voice touched Elspeth, who was so happy that she wanted everyone to be happy. "I want you to know, Grizel," she said warmly, "that I don't blame you for not being able to love him; we can't help those things. Nor need *you blame yourself* too much, for I have often

heard him say that artists must suffer in order to produce beautiful things."

"But I cannot remember," Elspeth had to admit, with a sigh, to David, "that she made any answer to that, except 'Thank you.'"

Grizel was nearly as reticent to David himself. Once only did she break down for a moment in his presence. It was when he was telling her that the issue of the book had been stopped.

"But I see you know already," he said. "Perhaps you even know why — though he has not given any sufficient reason to Elspeth."

David had given his promise, she reminded him, not to ask her any questions about Tommy.

"But I don't see why I should keep it," he said bluntly.

"Because you dislike him," she replied.

"Grizel," he declared, "I have tried hard to like him. I have thought and thought about it, and I can't see that he has given me any just cause to dislike him."

"And that," said Grizel, "makes you dislike him more than ever."

"I know that you cared for him once," David persisted, "and I know that he wanted to marry you——"

But she would not let him go on. "David," *she said*, "I want to give up my house, and I *want you* to take it. It is the real doctor's house

of Thrums, and people in need of you still keep ringing me up of nights. The only door to your surgery is through my passage; it is I who should be in lodgings now."

"Do you really think I would, Grizel!" he cried indignantly.

"Rather than see the dear house go into another's hands," she answered steadily; "for I am determined to leave it. Dr. McQueen won't feel strange when he looks down, David, if it is only you he sees moving about the old rooms, instead of me."

"You are doing this for me, Grizel, and I won't have it."

"I give you my word," she told him, "that I am doing it for myself alone. I am tired of keeping a house, and of all its worries. Men don't know what they are."

She was smiling, but his brows wrinkled in pain. "Oh, Grizel!" he said, and stopped. And then he cried, "Since when has Grizel ceased to care for housekeeping?"

She did not say since when. I don't know whether she knew; but it was since she and Tommy had ceased to correspond. David's words showed her too suddenly how she had changed, and it was then that she broke down before him—because she had ceased to care for housekeeping.

But she had her way, and early in the new year David and his wife were established in their new home, with all Grizel's furniture, except such as was needed for the two rooms rented by her from Gavinia. She would have liked to take away the old doctor's chair, because it was the bit of him left behind when he died, and then for that very reason she did not. She no longer wanted him to see her always. "I am not so nice as I used to be, and I want to keep it from you," she said to the chair when she kissed it good-bye.

Was Grizel not as nice as she used to be? How can I answer, who love her the more only? There is one at least, Grizel, who will never desert you.

Ah, but was she?

I seem again to hear the warning voice of Grizel, and this time she is crying: "You know I was not."

She knew it so well that she could say it to herself quite calmly. She knew that, with whatever repugnance she drove those passions away, they would come back — yes, and for a space be welcomed back. Why does she leave Gavinia's blue hearth this evening, and seek the solitary Den? She has gone to summon them, and she knows it. They come thick in the Den, for they know the place. It was there that her mother was wont to *walk with* them. Have they been waiting for you

the Den, Grizel, all this time? Have you found your mother's legacy at last?

Don't think that she sought them often. It was never when she seemed to have anything to live for. Tommy would not write to her, and so said not want her to write to him; but if that bowed her head, it never made her rebel. She still had her many duties. Whatever she suffered, so long as she could say, "I am helping him," she was in heart and soul the Grizel of old. In his fits of remorse, which were many, he tried to produce work that would please her. Thus, in a heroic attempt to be practical, he wrote a political article for one of the reviews, quite in the ordinary style, but so much worse than the average of such things that they would never have printed it without his name. He also contributed to a magazine a short tale,—he who could never write tales,—and he struck all the beautiful reflections out of it, and never referred to himself once, and the result was a imbecile that kindly people said there must be another writer of the same name. "Show them to Grizel," Tommy wrote to Elspeth, inclosing also some of the animadversions of the press, and he meant Grizel to see that he could write in his own way only. But she read those two efforts with delight, and said to Elspeth, "Tell him I am so proud of them."

Elspeth thought it very nice of Grizel to defend

the despised in this way (even Elspeth had f
asleep over the political paper). She did
understand that Grizel loved them because
showed Tommy trying to do without his win

Then another trifle by him appeared, sl
even than the others; but no man in En
could have written it except T. Sandys. I
not been reprinted, and I forget everything
it except that its subject was love. "Will n
friends of the man who can produce such a
masterpiece as this," the journals said, "save
from wasting his time on lumber for the rev
and drivelling tales?" And Tommy sugg
to Elspeth that she might show Grizel this e
tation also.

Grizel saw she was not helping him at all
he would not fight, why should she? Oh, l
fall and fall, it would not take her farther
him! These were the thoughts that sent he
solitude, to meet with worse ones. She coul
face the morrow. "What shall I do to-morr
She never shrank from to-day—it had its dut
could be got through: but to-morrow v
never-ending road. Oh, how could she get th
to-morrow?

Her great friend at this time was Corp; be
he still retained his faith in Tommy. She
always talk of Tommy to Corp.

How loyal Corp was! He still referr

Tommy as "him." Gavinia, much distressed, read aloud to Corp a newspaper attack on the political article, and all he said was, "He'll find a wy."

"He's found it," he went upstairs to announce to Grizel, when the praises of the "little masterpiece" arrived.

"Yes, I know, Corp," she answered quietly. She was sitting by the window where the plant was. Tommy had asked her to take care of it, without telling her why.

Something in her appearance troubled the hulking, blundering man. He could not have told what it was. I think it was simply this — that Grizel no longer sat erect in her chair.

"I'm nain easy in my mind about Grizel," he said that evening to Gavinia. "There's something queery about her, though I canna bottom 't."

"Yea?" said Gavinia, with mild contempt.

He continued pulling at his pipe, grunting as if in pleasant pain, which was the way Corp smoked.

"I could see she's no pleased, though he has found a wy," he said.

"What pleasure should she be able to sook out o' his keeping ding-ding-danging on about that woman?" retorted Gavinia.

"What woman?"

"*The London* besom that gae him the go-by."

"Was there sic a woman!" Corp cried.

"Of course there was, and it's her that he's aye writing about."

"Havers, Gavinia! It's Grizel he's aye writing about, and it was Grizel that gae him the go-by. It's town talk."

But whatever the town might say, Gavinia stuck to her opinion. "Grizel's no near so neat in her dressing as she was," she informed Corp, "and her hair is no aye tidy, and that bonnet she was in yesterday didna set her."

"I've noticed it," cried Corp. "I've noticed it this while back, though I didna ken I had noticed it, Gavinia. I wonder what can be the reason?"

"It's because nobody cares," Gavinia replied sadly. Trust one woman to know another!

"We a' care," said Corp, stoutly.

"We're a' as nothing, Corp, when he doesna care. She's fond o' him, man."

"Of course she is, in a wy. Whaur's the woman that could help it?"

"There's many a woman that could help it," said Gavinia, tartly, for the honour of her sex, "but she's no ane o' them." To be candid, Gavinia was not one of them herself. "I'm thinking she's terrible fond o' him," she said, "and I'm nain sure that he has treated her weel."

"Woman, take care; say a word agin him and I'll *mittle you!*" Corp thundered, and she desisted in fear.

But he made her re-read the little essay to him in instalments, and at the end he said victoriously, "You blethering crittur, there's no sic woman. It's ust another o' his ploys!"

He marched upstairs to Grizel with the news, and she listened kindly. "I am sure you are right," she said; "you understand him better than any of them, Corp," and it was true.

He thought he had settled the whole matter. He was burning to be downstairs to tell Gavinia that these things needed only a man. "And so you'll be yoursel' again, Grizel," he said, with great relief.

She had not seen that he was aiming at her until now, and it touched her. "Am I so different, Corp?"

Not at all, he assured her delicately, but she was maybe no quite so neatly dressed as she used to be, and her hair wasna braided back so smooth, and he didna think that bonnet quite set her.

"Gavinia has been saying that to you!"

"I noticed it mysel', Grizel; I'm a terrible noticher."

"Perhaps you are right," she said, reflecting, after looking at herself for the first time for some days. "But to think of your caring, Corp!"

"I care most michty," he replied, with terrific earnestness.

"*I must try to satisfy* you, then," she said, smil-

ing. "But, Corp, please don't discuss me with Gavinia."

This request embarrassed him, for soon again he did not know how to act. There was Grizel's strange behaviour with the child, for instance. "No, I won't come down to see him to-day, Corp," she had said; "somehow children weary me."

Such words from Grizel! His mouth would not shut and he could say nothing. "Forgive me, Corp!" she cried remorsefully, and ran downstairs, and with many a passionate caress asked forgiveness of the child.

Corp followed her, and for the moment he thought he must have been dreaming upstairs. "I wish I saw you wi' bairns o' your ain, Grizel," he said, looking on entranced; but she gave him such a pitiful smile that he could not get it out of his head. Deprived of Gavinia's counsel, and afraid to hurt Elspeth, he sought out the doctor and said bluntly to him, "How is it he never writes to Grizel? She misses him terrible."

"So," David thought, "Grizel's dejection is becoming common talk." "Damn him!" he said, in a gust of fury.

But this was too much for loyal Corp. "Damn you!" he roared.

But in his heart he knew that the doctor was a *just man*, and henceforth, when he was meaning to

comfort Grizel, he was often seeking comfort for himself.

He did it all with elaborate cunning, to prevent her guessing that he was disturbed about her: asked permission to sit with her, for instance, because he was dull downstairs; mentioned as a ludicrous thing that there were people who believed Tommy could treat a woman badly, and waited anxiously for the reply. Oh, he was transparent, was Corp, but you may be sure Grizel never let him know that she saw through him. Tommy could not be blamed, she pointed out, though he did not care for some woman who perhaps cared for him.

"Exac'ly," said Corp.

And if he seemed, Grizel went on, with momentary bitterness, to treat her badly, it could be only because she had made herself cheap.

"That's it," said Corp, cheerfully. Then he added hurriedly, "No, that's no it ava. She's the last to mak' hersel' cheap." Then he saw that this might put Grizel on the scent. "Of course there's no sic woman," he said artfully, "but if there was, he would mak' it a' right. She mightna see how it was to be done, but kennin' what a crittur he is, she maun be sure he would find a wy. She would never lose hope, Grizel."

And then, if Grizel did not appease him instantly, *he would* say appealingly, "I canna think

less o' him, Grizel; no, it would mak' me just terrible low. Grizel," he would cry sternly, "dinna tell me to think less o' that laddie."

Then, when she had reassured him, he would recall the many instances in which Tommy as a boy had found a way. "Did we ever ken he was finding it, Grizel, till he did find it? Many a time I says to mysel', says I, 'All is over,' and syne next minute that holy look comes ower his face, and he stretches out his legs like as if he was riding on a horse, and all that kens him says, 'He has found a wy.' If I was the woman (no that there is sic a woman) I would say to mysel', 'He was never beat,' I would say, 'when he was a laddie, and it's no likely he'll be beat when he's a man'; and I wouldna sit looking at the fire wi' my hands fauded, nor would I forget to keep my hair neat, and I would wear the frock that set me best, and I would play in my auld bonny wy wi' bairns, for says I to mysel', 'I'm sure to hae bairns o' my ain some day, and ——'"

But Grizel cried, "Don't, Corp, don't!"

"I winna," he answered miserably, "no, I winna. Forgive me, Grizel; I think I'll be stepping"; and then when he got as far as the door he would say, "I canna do 't, Grizel; I'm just terrible wae for the woman (if sic a woman there be), but I canna *think* ill o' him; you mauna speir it o' me."

He was much brightened by a reflection that

e to him one day in church. "Here have I
n near blaming him for no finding a wy, and very
he doesna ken we want him to find a wy!"
Iow to inform Tommy without letting Grizel
? She had tried twice long ago to teach him
rite, but he found it harder on the wrists than
heaviest luggage. It was not safe for him even
hink of the extra twirl that turned an *n* into an
vithout first removing any knick-knacks that
ht be about. Nevertheless, he now proposed a
l set-to, and Grizel acquiesced, though she
ught it but another of his inventions to keep her
n brooding.

'he number of words in the English tongue ex-
l him, and he often lost all by not confining the
e to one, like a dog after rabbits. Fortunately,
new which words he wanted to bag.

Change at Tilliedrum!" "Tickets! show your
ets!" and the like, he much enjoyed meeting in
flesh, so to speak.

Let's see 'Find a wy,' Grizel," he would say.
y, ay, and is that the crittur!" and soon the
fellow could write it, or at least draw it.

Ie affected an ambition to write a letter to his son
hat gentleman's first birthday, and so "Let's see
t 'I send you these few scrapes' is like, Grizel."
assured him that this is not essential in corre-
ndence, but all the letters he had ever heard read
ıd began thus, and he got his way.

Anon Master Shiach was surprised and grat
to receive the following epistle: "My dear s
send you these few scrapes to tell you as you
found a way to be a year of age the morn.
tickets ready in which Gavinia joins so no mc
present I am, sir, your obed[t] father Corp Shi

The fame of this letter went abroad, but r
soul knew of the next. It said: "My dear S
send you these few scrapes to tell you as G
needs cheering up. Kindly oblidge by fin
a way so no more at present. I am sir
obed[t] Serv[t] Corp Shiach."

To his bewilderment, this produced no ef
though only because Tommy never got it, an
wrote again, more sternly, requesting his her
find a way immediately. He was waiting restl
for the answer at a time when Elspeth callec
Grizel to tell her of something beautiful
Tommy had done. He had been very ill
nearly a fortnight, it appeared, but had kept it
her to save her anxiety. "Just think, Grizel
the time he was in bed with bronchitis he
writing me cheerful letters every other day
tending there was nothing the matter with
He is better now. I have heard about it fr
Mrs. Jerry, a lady whom I knew in London
who has nursed him in the kindest way." (Bu
same Mrs. Jerry had opened Corp's letters an
stroyed them as of no importance.) "He w

er have mentioned it himself. How like him, zel! You remember, I made him promise be- he went back to London that if he was ill he ld let me know at once so that I could go to , but he is so considerate he would not give me n. He wrote those letters, Grizel, when he was ping for breath."

"But she seemed quite unmoved," Elspeth said y to her husband afterwards.

Unmoved! Yes; Grizel remained apparently noved until Elspeth had gone, but then — the ure she endured! "Oh, cruel, cruel!" she d, and she could neither stand nor sit; she g herself down before the fire and rocked this and that, in a paroxysm of woe. "Oh, cruel, el!"

t was Tommy who was cruel. To be ill, near dying, apparently, and not to send her word! could never, never have let him go had he made that promise to Elspeth; and he kept it Oh, wicked, wicked!

You would have gone to him at once, Elspeth! u! Who are you, that talks of going to him as r right? He is not yours, I tell you; he is e! He is mine alone; it is I who would go to . Who is this woman that dares take my e by his side when he is ill!"

he rose to go to him, to drive away all others. n sure that was what gave her strength to rise;

but she sank to the floor again, and her pas lasted for hours. And through the night she crying to God that she would be brave no m In her despair she hoped he heard her.

Her mood had not changed when David c to see her next morning, to admit, too, that Tom seemed to have done an unselfish thing in conc ing his illness from them. Grizel nodded, bu thought she was looking strangely reckless. had a message from Elspeth. Tommy had as her to let him know whether the plant was fl ishing.

"So you and he don't correspond now?" Da said, with his old, puzzled look.

"No," was all her answer to that. The pl she thought, was dead; she had not, indeed, much attention to it of late; but she showed i David, and he said it would revive if more c fully tended. He also told her its rather path history, which was new to Grizel, and of the at the wedding which had led to Tommy's tal pity on it. "Fellow-feeling, I suppose," he lightly; "you see, they both blossomed pr turely."

The words were forgotten by him as soo spoken; but Grizel sat on with them, for were like a friend — or was it an enemy? — had come to tell her strange things. Yes

tor was right. Now she knew why Tommy
l loved this plant. Of the way in which he
uld sit looking wistfully at it, almost nursing it,
had been told by Aaron; he had himself
gged her to tend it lovingly. Fellow-feeling!
e doctor was shrewder than he thought.

Well, what did it matter to her? All that day
would do nothing for the plant, but in the
ddle of the night she rose and ran to it and
gged it, and for a time she was afraid to look at
y lamplight, lest Tommy was dead. Whether
had never been asleep that night, or had awak-
d from a dream, she never knew, but she ran to
plant, thinking it and Tommy were as one,
l that they must die together. No such thought
l ever crossed his mind, but it seemed to her
t she had been told it by him, and she lit her
to give the plant warmth, and often desisted, to
ss it to her bosom, the heat seemed to come so
uctantly from the fire. This idea that his fate
s bound up with that of the plant took strange
ssession of the once practical Grizel; it was as if
ne of Tommy's nature had passed into her to
lp her break the terrible monotony of the days.

And from that time there was no ailing child
re passionately tended than the plant, and as
ing advanced it began once more to put forth
w leaves.

And Grizel also seemed glorified again. S was her old self. Dark shapes still lingered for in the Den, but she avoided them, and if they t to enter into her, she struggled with them and c them out. As she saw herself able to fight a win once more, her pride returned to her, and day she could ask David, joyously, to give he present of the old doctor's chair. And she co kneel by its side and say to it, "You can wa me always; I am just as I used to be."

Seeing her once more the incarnation of vi and content, singing gaily to his child, and eager to be at her duties betimes as a morning May, Corp grunted with delight, and was a h for not telling her that it was he who had pas Tommy the word. For, of course, Tommy h done it all.

"Somebody has found a wy, Grizel!" he wo say, chuckling, and she smiled an agreement.

"And yet," says he, puzzled, "I've watch and you hinna haen a letter frae him. It de the face o' clay to find out how he has mana it. Oh, the crittur! Ay, I suppose you di want to tell me what it is that has lichted you again?"

She could not tell him, for it was a compact had made with one who did not sign it. "I s cease to be bitter and despairing and wicked, try every moment of my life to be good and

l, so long as my plant flourishes; but if it
ers, then I shall go to him — I don't care what
ens; I shall go to him."

was the middle of June when she first noticed
the plant was beginning to droop.

CHAPTER XXVII

GRIZEL'S JOURNEY

NOTHING could have been less expected. In the beginning of May its leaves had lost something of their greenness. The plant seemed to be hesitating, but she coaxed it over the hill, and since then it had scarcely needed her hand; almost light-headedly it hurried into its summer clothes, and new buds broke out on it, like smiles, at the fascinating thought that there was to be a to-morrow. Grizel's plant had never been so brave in its little life when suddenly it turned back.

That was the day on which Elspeth and David were leaving for a fortnight's holiday with his relatives by the sea; for Elspeth needed and was getting special devotion just now, and Grizel knew why. She was glad they were going; it was well that they should not be there to ask questions if she also must set forth on a journey.

For more than a week she waited, and everything she could do for her plant she did. She *watched* it so carefully that she might have *deceived herself* into believing that it was standing

still only, had there been no night-time. She thought she had not perhaps been sufficiently good, and she tried to be more ostentatiously satisfied with her lot. Never had she forced herself to work quite so hard for others as in those few days, and then when she came home it had drooped a little more.

When she was quite sure that it was dying, she told Corp she was going to London by that night's train. "He is ill, Corp, and I must go to him."

Ill! But how had he let her know?

"He has found a way," she said, with a tremulous smile. He wanted her to telegraph; but no, she would place no faith in telegrams.

At least she could telegraph to Elspeth and the doctor. One of them would go.

"It is I who am going," she said quietly. "I can't wait any longer. It was a promise, Corp. He loves me." They were the only words she said which suggest that there was anything strange about Grizel at this time.

Corp saw how determined she was when she revealed, incidentally, that she had drawn a sum of money out of the bank a week ago, "to be ready."

"What will folk say!" he cried.

"You can tell Gavinia the truth when I am gone," she told him. "She will know better than you what to say to other people." And that was some *comfort to him*, for it put the burden of in-

vention upon his wife. So it was Corp who Grizel off. He was in great distress himself a Tommy, but he kept a courageous face for and his last words flung in at the carriage wi were, "Now dinna be down-hearted; I'm down-hearted mysel', for we're very sure he'll a wy." And Grizel smiled and nodded, an train turned the bend that shuts out the little of Thrums. The town vanishes quickly, bu quarry we howked it out of stands grim and watching the train for many a mile.

Of Grizel's journey to London there are no ticulars to tell. She was wearing her brown ja and fur cap because Tommy had liked them, she sat straight and stiff all the way. She never been in a train since she was a baby, ex two or three times to Tilliedrum, and she tho this was the right way to sit. Always, when train stopped, which was at long intervals, she her head out at the window and asked if this the train to London. Every station a train at in the middle of the night is the infernal reg and she shuddered to hear lost souls clanking chains, which is what a milk-can becomes o way to the van; but still she asked if this wa train to London. When fellow-passengers dressed her, she was very modest and cautio her replies. Sometimes a look of extraord happiness, of radiance, passed over her face,

have puzzled them. It was part of the thought
, however ill he might be, she was to see him now.
he did not see him as soon as she expected, for
he door of Tommy's lodgings they told her that
had departed suddenly for the Continent about
eek ago. He was to send an address by and by
hich letters could be forwarded. Was he quite
l when he went away? Grizel asked, shaking.
he landlady and her daughter thought he was
er peakish, but he had not complained.
He went away for his health, Grizel informed
n, and he was very ill now. Oh, could they not
her where he was? All she knew was that he
very ill. "I am engaged to be married to
," she said with dignity. Without this strange
ainty that Tommy loved her at last, she could
have trod the road which faced her now. Even
n she had left the house, where at their sugges-
she was to call to-morrow, she found herself
ndering at once what he would like her to do
, and she went straight to a hotel, and had her
sent to it from the station, and she remained
e all day because she thought that this was what
would like her to do. She sat bolt upright on
ne chair in her bedroom, praying to God with
eyes open; she was begging Him to let
mmy tell her where he was, and promising to
rn home at once if he did not need her.
Next morning they showed her, at his lodgings,

two lines in a newspaper, which said that h ill with bronchitis at the Hôtel Krone, Bad-Pl in Switzerland.

It may have been an answer to her pray she thought, but we know now how the para got into print. On the previous evening the lady had met Mr. Pym on the ladder of an bus, and told him, before they could be pl apart, of the lady who knew that Mr. Sandy ill. It must be bronchitis again. Pym was troubled; he knew that the Krone at Bad-P had been Tommy's destination. He talke day, and one of the company was a reporter, accounts for the paragraph.

Grizel found out how she could get to Platten. She left her box behind her at the room of the railway station, where I supp was sold years afterwards. From Dover she telegram to Tommy, saying: "I am co GRIZEL."

On entering the train at Calais she had a ra journey of some thirty hours, broken by changes only. She could speak a little F but all the use she made of it was to ask r edly if she was in the right train. An Englis who travelled with her for many hours wo now and again to notice that this quiet, looking girl was always sitting erect, with he on her umbrella, as if ready to leave the t

moment. The lady pointed out some of the uties of the scenery to her, and Grizel tried to en. "I am afraid you are unhappy," her com- ion said at last.

That is not why I am crying," Grizel said; "I nk I am crying because I am so hungry."

The stranger gave her sandwiches and claret as l as the rivers that raced the train; and Grizel her, quite frankly, why she was going to Bad- tten. She did not tell his name, only that he ill, and that she was engaged to him, and he sent for her. She believed it all. The lady very sympathetic, and gave her information ut the diligence by which the last part of Gri- s journey must be made, and also said: "You st not neglect your meals, if only for his sake; for can you nurse him back to health if you ar- at Bad-Platten ill yourself? Consider his dis- s if he were to be told that you were in the inn, not able to go to him."

Oh!" Grizel cried, rocking her arms for the t time since she knew her plant was drooping. promised to be very practical henceforth, so as have strength to take her place by his side at e. It was strange that she who was so good a se had forgotten these things, so strange that it rmed her, as if she feared that, without being e to check herself, she was turning into some er person.

The station where she alighted was in a hubb of life; everyone seemed to leave the train hi and to resent the presence of all the others. Th were mostly English. The men hung back, a now that there was business to be done in sc foolish tongue, they had better leave the ladie do it. Many of them seemed prepared, if th was dissension, to disown their womankind and for it. They looked haughty and nervous. Si of them as had tried to shave in the train w boasting of it and holding handkerchiefs to th chins. The ladies were moving about in a mas ful way, carrying bunches of keys. When th had done everything, the men went and stood their sides again.

Outside the station buses and carriages were numerable, and everybody was shouting; but Gr saw that nearly all her fellow-passengers were h rying by foot or conveyance to one spot, all d ous of being there first, and she thought it mus the place where the diligence started from, pressed on with them. It proved to be a h where they all wanted the best bedroom, and n of them had telegraphed for it, and they gath round a man in uniform and demanded that r of him; but he treated them as if they were dogs and he was not the platter, and soon were begging for a room on the fourth floor a back, and swelling with triumph if they g

he scrimmage was still going on when Grizel pped out of the hotel, having learned that the ligence would not start until the following morn-g. It was still early in the afternoon. How uld she wait until to-morrow?

Bad-Platten was forty miles away. The road s pointed out to her. It began to climb at once. e was to discover that for more than thirty miles never ceased to climb. She sat down, hesitating, a little bridge that spanned a horrible rushing ite stream. Poets have sung the glories of that eam, but it sent a shiver through her. On all es she was caged in by a ring of splendid moun-ns, but she did not give them one admiring glance here is a special spot where the guide-books ad-se you to stop for a moment to do it); her one ssionate desire was to fling out her arms and ock them over.

She had often walked twenty miles in a day, in hill country too, without feeling tired, and there emed no reason why she should not set off now. here were many inns on the way, she was told, here she could pass the night. There she could t the diligence next day. This would not bring r any sooner to him than if she waited here until -morrow; but how could she sit still till to-orrow? She must be moving; she seemed to ve been sitting still for an eternity. "I must t do anything rash," she told herself, carefully

"I must arrive at Bad-Platten able to sit down beside him the moment I have taken off my jacket —oh, without waiting to take off my jacket." She went into the hotel and ate some food, just to show herself how careful she had become. About three o'clock she set off. She had a fierce desire to get away from that heartless white stream and the crack of whips and the doleful pine woods, and at first she walked very quickly; but she never got away from them, for they marched with her. It was not that day, but the next, that Grizel thought anything was marching with her. That day her head was quite clear, and she kept her promise to herself, and as soon as she felt tired she stopped for the night at a village inn. But when she awoke very early next morning she seemed to have forgotten that she was to travel the rest of the way by diligence; for, after a slight meal, she started off again on foot, and she was walking all day.

She passed through many villages so like each other that in time she thought they might be the same. There was always a monster inn whence one carriage was departing as another drove up, and there was a great stone water-tank in which women drew their washing back and forward, and there was always a big yellow dog that barked fiercely and then giggled, and at the doors of *painted* houses children stood. You knew they *were* children by their size only. The one person

she spoke to that day was a child who offered her a bunch of wild flowers. No one was looking, and Grizel kissed her and then hurried on.

The carriage passed and repassed her. There must have been a hundred of them, but in time they became one. No sooner had it disappeared in dust in front of her than she heard the crack of its whip behind.

It was a glorious day of sweltering sun; but she was bewildered now, and did not open the umbrella with which she had shielded her head yesterday. In the foreground was always the same white road, on both sides the same pine wood laughing with wild flowers, the same roaring white stream. From somewhere near came the tinkle of cow-bells. Far away on heights, if she looked up, were villages made of match-boxes. She saw what were surely the same villages if she looked down; or the one was the reflection of the other, in the sky above or in the valley below. They stood out so vividly that they might have been within arm's reach. They were so small that she felt she could extinguish them with her umbrella. Near them was the detestably picturesque castle perched upon a bracket. Everywhere was that loathly waterfall. Here and there were squares of cultivated land that looked like door-mats flung out upon the hillsides. The huge mountains raised their jagged heads through the snow, and

were so sharp-edged that they might have been clipped out of cardboard. The sky was blue, without a flaw; but lost clouds crawled like snakes between heaven and earth. All day the sun scorched her, but the night was nipping cold.

From early morn till evening she climbed to get away from them, but they all marched with her. They waited while she slept. She woke up in an inn, and could have cried with delight because she saw nothing but bare walls. But as soon as she reached the door, there they all were, ready for her. An hour after she set off, she again reached that door; and she stopped at it to ask if this was the inn where she had passed the night. Everything had turned with her. Two squalls of sudden rain drenched her that day, and she forced her way through the first, but sought a covering from the second.

It was then afternoon, and she was passing through a village by a lake. Since Grizel's time monster hotels have trampled the village to death, and the shuddering lake reflects all day the most hideous of caravansaries flung together as with a giant shovel in one of the loveliest spots on earth. Even then some of the hotels had found it out. Grizel drew near to two of them, and saw wet halls full of open umbrellas which covered the floor and looked like great beetles. These buildings were too formidable, and she dragged herself

past them. She came to a garden of hops and evergreens. Wet chairs were standing in the deserted walks, and here and there was a little arbour. She went into one of these arbours and sat down, and soon slid to the floor.

The place was St. Gian, some miles from Bad-Platten; but one of the umbrellas she had seen was Tommy's. Others belonged to Mrs. Jerry and Lady Pippinworth.

CHAPTER XXVIII

TWO OF THEM

WHEN Tommy started impulsively on what proved to be his only Continental trip he had expected to join Mrs. Jerry and her stepdaughter at Bad-Platten. They had been there for a fortnight, and "the place is a dream," Mrs. Jerry had said in the letter pressing him to come; but it was at St. Gian that she met the diligence and told him to descend. Bad-Platten, she explained, was a horror.

Her fuller explanation was that she was becoming known there as the round lady.

"Now, am I as round as all that?" she said plaintively to Tommy.

"Mrs. Jerry," he replied, with emotion, "you must not ask me what I think of you." He always treated her with extraordinary respect and chivalry now, and it awed her.

She had looked too, too round because she was in the company of Lady Pippinworth. Everyone seemed to be too round or too large by the side of *that gifted* lady, who somehow never looked too *thin.* She knew her power. When there were

ı in the room whom she disliked she merely
ınd stood beside them. In the gyrations of
ınce the onlooker would momentarily lose
ɔf her; she came and went like a blinking
. Men could not dance with her without
ıg said that they were getting stout. There
ıing they dislike so much, yet they did dance
er. Tommy, having some slight reason, was
ılarly sensitive about references to his figure,
was Lady Pippinworth who had drawn him
tzerland. What was her strange attraction?
nly considered, she was preposterously thin,
en, at least, could not think merely of her
ss, unless, when walking with her, they be-
fascinated by its shadow on the ground.
as tall, and had a very clear, pale complexion
ght-brown hair. Light brown, too, were her
eyelashes, which were famous for being
tipped, as if a brush had touched them,
ı it had not. She made play with her eye-
as with a fan, and sometimes the upper and
seemed to entangle for a moment and be in
lties, from which you wanted to extricate
n the tenderest manner. And the more you
ł to help her the more disdainfully she looked
. Yet though she looked disdainful she also
l helpless. Now we have the secret of her

s helpless disdain was the natural expression

of her face, and I am sure she fell asleep with a curl of the lip. Her scorn of men so maddened them that they could not keep away from her. "Damn!" they said under their breath, and rushed to her. If rumour is to be believed, Sir Harry Pippinworth proposed to her in a fury brought on by the sneer with which she had surveyed his family portraits. I know nothing more of Sir Harry, except that she called him Pips, which seems to settle him.

"They will be calling me the round gentleman," Tommy said ruefully to her that evening, as he strolled with her towards the lake, and indeed he was looking stout. Mrs. Jerry did not accompany them; she wanted to be seen with her trying stepdaughter as little as possible, and Tommy's had been the happy proposal that he should attend them alternately — "fling away my own figure to save yours," he had said gallantly to Mrs. Jerry.

"Do you mind?" Lady Pippinworth asked.

"I mind nothing," he replied, "so long as I am with you."

He had not meant to begin so near the point where they had last left off; he had meant to begin much farther back: but an irresistible desire came over him to make sure that she really did permit him to say this sort of thing.

Her only reply was a flutter of the little fans and *most* contemptuous glance.

"Alice," said Tommy, in the old way.

"Well?"

"You don't understand what it is to me to say Alice again."

"Many people call me Alice."

"But they have a right to."

"I supposed you thought you had a right to also."

"No," said Tommy. "That is why I do it."

She strolled on, more scornful and helpless than ever. Apparently it did not matter what one said to Lady Pippinworth; her pout kept it within the proprieties.

There was a magnificent sunset that evening, which dyed a snow-topped mountain pink. "That is what I came all the way from London to see," Tommy remarked, after they had gazed at it.

"I hope you feel repaid," she said, a little tartly.

"You mistake my meaning," he replied. "I had heard of these wonderful sunsets, and an intense desire came over me to see you looking disdainfully at them. Yes, I feel amply repaid. Did you notice, Alice, or was it but a fancy of my own, that when he had seen the expression on your face the sun quite slunk away?"

"I wonder you don't do so also," she retorted. She had no sense of humour, and was rather stupid; so it is no wonder that the men ran after her.

"I am *more gallant* than the sun," said he. "W

I had been up there in its place, Alice, and had been looking at me, I could never have se

She pouted contemptuously, which mear think, that she was well pleased. Yet, thoug seemed to be complimenting her, she was not of him. She had never been sure of Tommy. indeed, he of her, which was probably why were so interested in each other still.

"Do you know," Tommy said, "what I told you is really at least half the truth? If not come here to see you disdaining the s think I did come to see you disdaining me. is it not, if true, that a man should travel so see a lip curl up?"

"You don't seem to know what brought she said.

"It seems so monstrous," he replied, m "Oh, yes, I am quite certain that the curl lip is responsible for my being here; it kept ing me constant telegrams; but what I wa know is, do I come for the pleasure of the thi for the pain? Do I like your disdain, Ali does it make me writhe? Am I here to be to do it again, or to defy it?"

"Which are you doing now?" she inquir

"I had hoped," he said with a sigh, "tha could tell me that."

On another occasion they reached the point in this discussion, and went a little b

as on a wet afternoon, too, when Tommy
ed to himself to mend his ways. "That
l look is you," he told her, "and I admire
than anything in nature; and yet, Alice
——"
l?" she answered coldly, but not moving,
ıe had come suddenly too near her. They
a private veranda of the hotel, and she
ng in a wicker chair.
yet," he said intensely, "I am not certain
ould not give the world to have the power
that look from your face. That, I begin
is what brought me here."
you are not sure," she said, with a shrug
ıoulder.
ng him into venturing further than he had
ıe with her before. Not too gently, he
r head in both his hands and forced her to
at him. She submitted without a protest.
disdainful, but helpless.
l?" she said again.
ithdrew his hands, and she smiled mock

thought ——" he cried with sudden pas-
l stopped.
ı think a great deal, don't you?" she said.
going now.
thought there was any blood in your veins,
woman ——"

"Or in your own," said she. But she said
little fiercely, and he noticed that.

"Alice," he cried, "I know now. It is to d
that look from your face that I am here."

She courtesied from the door. She was q
herself again.

But for that moment she had been moved.
was convinced of it, and his first feeling wa
exultation as in an achievement. I don't k
what you are doing just now, Lady Pippinwo
but my compliments to you, and T. Sandys
swelling.

There followed on this exultation another feeli
as sincere — devout thankfulness that he had go
no further. He drew deep breaths of relief o
his escape, but knew that he had not himself
thank. His friends, the little sprites, had done
in return for the amusement he seemed to gi
them. They had stayed him in the nick of tim
but not earlier; it was quite as if they wante
Tommy to have his fun first. So often they ha
saved him from being spitted, how could he gue
that the great catastrophe was fixed for to-nigh
and that henceforth they were to sit round hi
counting his wriggles, as if this new treatment o
him tickled them even more than the other?

But he was too clever not to know that the
might be fattening him for some very special feas
and his thanks took the form of a vow to nee

their help no more. To-morrow he would begin to climb the mountains around St. Gian; if he danced attendance on her dangerous Ladyship again, Mrs. Jerry should be there also, and he would walk circumspectly between them, like a man with gyves upon his wrists. He was in the midst of all the details of these reforms, when suddenly he looked at himself thus occupied, and laughed bitterly; he had so often come upon Tommy making grand resolves!

He stopped operations and sat down beside them. No one could have wished more heartily to be anybody else, or have had less hope. He had not even the excuse of being passionately drawn to this woman; he remembered that she had never interested him until he heard of her effect upon other men. Her reputation as a duellist, whose defence none of his sex could pass, had led to his wondering what they saw in her, and he had dressed himself in their sentiments and so approached her. There were times in her company when he forgot that he was wearing borrowed garments, when he went on flame, but he always knew, as now, upon reflection. Nothing seemed easier at this moment than to fling them aside; with one jerk they were on the floor. Obviously it was only vanity that had inspired him, and vanity was satisfied: the easier, therefore, to stop. Would *you like to make the* woman unhappy, Tommy?

You know you would not; you have somewhere about you one of the softest hearts in the world. Then desist; be satisfied that you did thaw her once, and grateful that she so quickly froze again. "I am; indeed I am," he responds. "No one could have himself better in hand for the time being than I, and if a competition in morals were now going on, I should certainly take the medal. But I cannot speak for myself an hour in advance. I make a vow, as I have done so often before, but it does not help me to know what I may be at before the night is out."

When his disgust with himself was at its height he suddenly felt like a little god. His new book had come into view. He flicked a finger at his reflection in a mirror. "That for you!" he said defiantly; "at least I can write; I can write at last!"

The manuscript lay almost finished at the bottom of his trunk. It could not easily have been stolen for one hour without his knowing. Just when he was about to start on a walk with one of the ladies, he would run upstairs to make sure that it was still there; he made sure by feeling, and would turn again at the door to make sure by looking. Miser never listened to the crispness of bank-notes with more avidity; woman never spent more time in shutting and opening her jewel-box.

"*I* can write at last!" He knew that, comparatively speaking, he had never been able to write

before. He remembered the fuss that had been made about his former books. "Pooh!" he said, addressing them contemptuously.

Once more he drew his beloved manuscript from its hiding-place. He did not mean to read, only to fondle; but his eye chancing to fall on a special passage — two hours afterwards he was interrupted by the dinner-gong. He returned the pages to the box and wiped his eyes. While dressing hurriedly he remembered with languid interest that Lady Pippinworth was staying in the same hotel.

There were a hundred or more at dinner, and they were all saying the same thing: "Where have you been to-day?" "Really! but the lower path is shadier." "Is this your first visit?" "The glacier is very nice." "Were you caught in the rain?" "The view from the top is very nice." "After all, the rain lays the dust." "They give you two sweets at Bad-Platten and an ice on Sunday." "The sunset is very nice." "The poulet is very nice." The hotel is open during the summer months only, but probably the chairs in the dining-room and the knives and forks in their basket make these remarks to each other every evening throughout the winter.

Being a newcomer, Tommy had not been placed beside either of his friends, who sat apart "because," Mrs. Jerry said, "she calls me mamma, and I am not going to stand that." For some time he *gave thought to* neither of them; he was en-

grossed in what he had been reading, and it turned him into a fine and magnanimous character. When gradually her Ladyship began to flit among his reflections, it was not to disturb them, but because she harmonized. He wanted to apologize to her. The apology grew in grace as the dinner progressed; it was so charmingly composed that he was profoundly stirred by it.

The opportunity came presently in the hall, where it is customary after dinner to lounge or stroll if you are afraid of the night air. Or if you do not care for music, you can go into the drawing-room and listen to the piano.

"I am sure mamma is looking for you everywhere," Lady Pippinworth said, when Tommy took a chair beside her. "It is her evening, you know."

"Surely you would not drive me away," he replied with a languishing air, and then smiled at himself, for he was done with this sort of thing. "Lady Pippinworth," said he, firmly—it needs firmness when of late you have been saying "Alice."

"Well?"

"I have been thinking——" Tommy began.

"I am sure you have," she said.

"I have been thinking," he went on determinedly, "that I played a poor part this afternoon. I had no right to say what I said to you."

"As far as I can remember," she answered, "you *did not* say very much."

"It is like your generosity, Lady Pippinworth," he said, "to make light of it; but let us be frank: I made love to you."

Anyone looking at his expressionless face and her lazy disdain (and there were many in the hall) would have guessed that their talk was of where were you to-day? and what should I do to-morrow?

"You don't really mean that?" her Ladyship said incredulously. "Think, Mr. Sandys, before you tell me anything more. Are you sure you are not confusing me with mamma?"

"I did it," said Tommy, remorsefully.

"In my absence?" she asked.

"When you were with me on the veranda."

Her eyes opened to their widest, so surprised that the lashes had no time for their usual play.

"Was that what you call making love, Mr. Sandys?" she inquired.

"I call a spade a spade."

"And now you are apologizing to me, I understand?"

"If you can in the goodness of your heart forgive me, Lady Pippinworth ——"

"Oh, I do," she said heartily, "I do. But how stupid you must have thought me not even to know! I feel that it is I who ought to apologize. What a number of ways there seem to be of making love, and yours is such an odd way!"

Now to apologize for playing a poor part is one

thing, and to put up with the charge of playing a part poorly is quite another. Nevertheless, he kept his temper.

"You have discovered an excellent way of punishing me," he said manfully, "and I submit. Indeed, I admire you the more. So I am paying you a compliment when I whisper that I know you knew."

But she would not have it. "You are so strangely dense to-night," she said. "Surely, if I had known, I would have stopped you. You forget that I am a married woman," she added, remembering Pips rather late in the day.

"There might be other reasons why you did not stop me," he replied impulsively.

"Such as?"

"Well, you — you might have wanted me to go on."

He blurted it out.

"So," said she slowly, "you are apologizing to me for not going on?"

"I implore you, Lady Pippinworth," Tommy said, in much distress, "not to think me capable of that. If I moved you for a moment, I am far from boasting of it; it makes me only the more anxious to do what is best for you."

This was not the way it had shaped during dinner, and Tommy would have acted wisely had he now gone out to cool his head. "If you moved

me?" she repeated interrogatively; but, with the best intentions, he continued to flounder.

"Believe me," he implored her, "had I known it could be done, I should have checked myself. But they always insist that you are an iceberg, and am I so much to blame if that look of hauteur deceived me with the rest? Oh, dear Lady Disdain," he said warmly, in answer to one of her most freezing glances, "it deceives me no longer. From that moment I knew you had a heart, and I was shamed — as noble a heart as ever beat in woman," he added. He always tended to add generous bits when he found it coming out well.

"Does the man think I am in love with him?" was Lady Disdain's inadequate reply.

"No, no, indeed!" he assured her earnestly. "I am not so vain as to think that, nor so selfish as to wish it; but if for a moment you were moved ——"

"But I was not," said she, stamping her shoe.

His dander began to rise, as they say in the north; but he kept grip of politeness.

"If you were moved for a moment, Lady Pippinworth," he went on, in a slightly more determined voice,—"I am far from saying that it was so; but if——"

"But as I was not——" she said.

It was no use putting things prettily to her when *she snapped you* up in this way.

"You know you were," he said reproachfully.

"I assure you," said she, "I don't know what you are talking about, but apparently it is something dreadful; so perhaps one of us ought to go away."

As he did not take this hint, she opened a tattered Tauchnitz which was lying at her elbow. They are always lying at your elbow in a Swiss hotel, with the first pages missing.

Tommy watched her gloomily. "This is unworthy of you," he said.

"What is?"

He was not quite sure, but as he sat there misgivings entered his mind and began to gnaw. Was it all a mistake of his? Undeniably he did think too much. After all, had she not been moved? 'Sdeath!

His restlessness made her look up. "It must be a great load off your mind," she said, with gentle laughter, "to know that your apology was unnecessary."

"It is," Tommy said; "it is." ('Sdeath!)

She resumed her book.

So this was how one was rewarded for a generous impulse! He felt very bitter. "So, so," he said inwardly; also, "Very well, ve-ry well." Then he turned upon himself. "Serve you right," he *said* brutally. "Better stick to your books, *Thomas*, for you know nothing about women."

To think for one moment that he had moved her! That streak of marble moved! He fell to watching her again, as if she were some troublesome sentence that needed licking into shape. As she bent impertinently over her book, she was an insult to man. All Tommy's interest in her revived. She infuriated him.

"Alice," he whispered.

"Do keep quiet till I finish this chapter," she begged lazily.

It brought him at once to the boiling-point.

"Alice!" he said fervently.

She had noticed the change in his voice. "People are looking," she said, without moving a muscle.

There was some subtle flattery to him in the warning, but he could not ask for more, for just then Mrs. Jerry came in. She was cloaked for the garden, and he had to go with her, sulkily. At the door she observed that the ground was still wet.

"Are you wearing your goloshes?" said he, brightening. "You must get them, Mrs. Jerry; I insist."

She hesitated. (Her room was on the third floor.) "It is very good of you to be so thoughtful of me," she said, "but——"

"But I have no right to try to take care of you," he interposed in a melancholy voice. "It is true. *Let us go.*"

"I sha'n't be two minutes," said Mrs. Jerry, in a flutter, and went off hastily for her goloshes, while he looked fondly after her. At the turn of the stair she glanced back, and his eyes were still begging her to hurry. It was a gracious memory to her in the after years, for she never saw him again.

As soon as she was gone he returned to the hall and taking from a peg a cloak with a Mother Goose hood, brought it to Lady Pippinworth, who had watched her mamma trip upstairs.

"Did I say I was going out?" she asked.

"Yes," said Tommy, and she rose to let him put the elegant thing round her. She was one of those dangerous women who look their best when you are helping them to put on their cloaks.

"Now," he instructed her, "pull the hood over your head."

"Is it so cold as that?" she said, obeying.

"I want you to wear it," he answered. What he meant was that she never looked quite so impudent as in her hood, and his vanity insisted that she should be armed to the teeth before they resumed hostilities. The red light was in his eyes as he drew her into the garden where Grizel lay.

CHAPTER XXIX

THE RED LIGHT

It was an evening without stars, but fair, sufficient wind to make her Ladyship cling haughtily to his arm as they turned corners. Many of the visitors were in the garden, some grouped round a quartet of gaily attired minstrels, but more sitting in little arbours or prowling in search of an arbour to sit in; the night was so dark that when our two passed beyond the light of the hotel windows they could scarce see the shrubs they brushed against; cigars without faces behind them sauntered past; several times they thought they had found an unoccupied arbour at last, when they heard the clink of coffee-cups.

"I believe the castle dates from the fifteenth century," Tommy would then say suddenly, though it was not of castles he had been talking.

With a certain satisfaction he noticed that she permitted him, without comment, to bring in the castle thus and to drop it the moment the emergency had passed. But he had little other encouragement.

Even when she pressed his arm it was only as intimation that the castle was needed.

"I can't even make her angry," he said wr fully to himself.

"You answer not a word," he said in g dejection to her.

"I am afraid to speak," she admitted. "I d know who may hear."

"Alice," he said eagerly, "what would you if you were not afraid to speak?"

They had stopped, and he thought she trem a little on his arm, but he could not be sure. thought — but he was thinking too much ag at least, Lady Pippinworth seemed to come to conclusion, for with a galling little laugh she mo on. He saw with amazing clearness that he thought sufficiently for one day.

On coming into the garden with her, and some time afterwards, he had been studying so coolly, watching symptoms rather than w that there is nothing to compare the man to b doctor who, while he is chatting, has his fi on your pulse. But he was not so calm Whether or not he had stirred the woman, he rapidly firing himself.

When next he saw her face by the light window, she at the same instant turned her ey him: it was as if each wanted to know corn

how the other had been looking in the darkness, and the effect was a challenge.

Like one retreating a step, she lowered her eyes. "I am tired," she said. "I shall go in."

"Let us stroll round once more."

"No, I am going in."

"If you are afraid——" he said, with a slight smile.

She took his arm again. "Though it is too bad of me to keep you out," she said, as they went on, "for you are shivering. Is it the night air that makes you shiver?" she asked mockingly.

But she shivered a little herself, as if with a presentiment that she might be less defiant if he were less thoughtful. For a month or more she had burned to teach him a lesson, but there was a time before that when, had she been sure he was in earnest, she would have preferred to be the pupil.

Two ladies came out of an arbour where they had been drinking coffee, and sauntered towards the hotel. It was a tiny building, half concealed in hops and reached by three steps, and Tommy and his companion took possession. He groped in the darkness for a chair for her, and invited her tenderly to sit down. She said she preferred to stand. She was by the open window, her fingers drumming on the sill. Though he could not see her face, he knew exactly how she was looking.

"Sit down," he said, rather masterfully.

"I prefer to stand," she repeated languidly.

He had a passionate desire to take her by shoulders, but put his hand on hers instead, she permitted it, like one disdainful but help She said something unimportant about the still

"Is it so still?" he said in a low voice. seem to hear a great noise. I think it must be beating of my heart."

"I fancy that is what it is," she drawled.

"Do you hear it?"

"No."

"Did you ever hear your own heart Alice?"

"No."

He had both her hands now. "Would you to hear it?"

She pulled away her hands sharply. "Yes," replied with defiance.

"But you pulled away your hands first," saic

He heard her breathe heavily for a moment, she said nothing. "Yes," he said, as if she spoken, "it is true."

"What is true?"

"What you are saying to yourself just nov that you hate me."

She beat the floor with her foot.

"*How* you hate me, Alice!"

"*Oh*, no."

"Yes, indeed you do."

"I wonder why," she said, and she trembled a tle.

"I know why." He had come close to her ain. "Shall I tell you why?"

She said "No," hurriedly.

"I am so glad you say No." He spoke passion-ely, and yet there was banter in his voice, or so it emed to her. "It is because you fear to be told; is because you had hoped that I did not know."

"Tell me why I hate you!" she cried.

"Tell me first that you do."

"Oh, I do, I do indeed!" She said the words a white heat of hatred.

Before she could prevent him he had raised her and to his lips.

"Dear Alice!" he said.

"Why is it?" she demanded.

"Listen!" he said. "Listen to your heart, Alice; it is beating now. It is telling you why. Does it need an interpreter? It is saying you ate me because you think I don't love you."

"Don't you?" she asked fiercely.

"No," Tommy said.

Her hands were tearing each other, and she ould not trust herself to speak. She sat down leadly pale in the chair he had offered her.

"No man ever loved you," he said, leaning over er with his hand on the back of the chair. "You

are smiling at that, I know; but it is true, Lady Disdain. They may have vowed to blow their brains out, and seldom did it; they may have let you walk over them, and they may have become your fetch-and-carry, for you were always able to drive them crazy; but love does not bring men so low. They tried hard to love you, and it was not that they could not love; it was that you were unlovable. That is a terrible thing to a woman. You think you let them try to love you, that you might make them your slaves when they succeeded; but you made them your slaves because they failed. It is a power given to your cold and selfish nature in place of the capacity for being able to be loved, with which women not a hundredth part as beautiful as you are dowered, and you have a raging desire, Alice, to exercise it over me as over the others; but you can't."

Had he seen her face then, it might have warned him to take care; but he heard her words only, and they were not at all in keeping with her face.

"I see I can't," was what she cried, almost in a whisper.

"It is all true, Alice, is it not?"

"I suppose so. I don't know; I don't care." She swung round in her chair and caught his sleeve. Her hands clung to it. "Say you love *me now*," she said. "I cannot live without your

love after this. What shall I do to make you love me? Tell me, and I will do it."

He could not stop himself, for he mistrusted her still.

"I will not be your slave," he said, through his teeth. "You shall be mine."

"Yes, yes."

"You shall submit to me in everything. If I say 'come,' you shall come to wheresoever it may be; and if I say 'stay,' and leave you for ever, you shall stay."

"Very well," she said eagerly. She would have her revenge when he was her slave.

"You can continue to be the haughty Lady Disdain to others, but you shall be only obedient little Alice to me."

"Very well." She drew his arm towards her and pressed her lips upon it. "And for that you will love me a little, won't you? You will love me at last, won't you?" she entreated.

He was a masterful man up to a certain point only. Her humility now tapped him in a new place, and before he knew what he was about he began to run pity.

"To humiliate you so, Alice! I am a dastard. I am not such a dastard as you think me. I wanted to know that you would be willing to do all these things, but I would never have let you do *them.*"

"I am willing to do them."

"No, no." It was he who had her hands now. "It was brutal, but I did it for you, Alice — for you. Don't you see I was doing it only to make a woman of you? You were always adorable, but in a coat of mail that would let love neither in nor out. I have been hammering at it to break it only and free my glorious Alice. We had to fight, and one of us had to give in. You would have flung me away if I had yielded — I had to win to save you."

"Now I am lost indeed," he was saying to himself, even as it came rushing out of him, and what appalled him most was that worse had probably still to come. He was astride two horses, and both were at the gallop. He flung out his arms as if seeking for something to check him.

As he did so she had started to her feet, listening. It seemed to her that there was someone near them.

He flung out his arms for help, and they fell upon Lady Pippinworth and went round her. He drew her to him. She could hear no breathing now but his.

"Alice, I love you, for you are love itself; it is you I have been chasing since first love rose like a bird at my feet; I never had a passing fancy for *any other* woman; I always knew that somewhere *in the* world there must be you, and sometime this

less night and you for me. You were hidden behind walls of ice; no man had passed them; I broke them down and love leaped to love, and you are here, my beautiful, love in the arms of its lover."

He was in a frenzy of passion now; he meant every word of it; and her intention was to turn upon him presently and mock him, this man with whom she had been playing. Oh, the jeering things she had to say! But she could not say them yet; she would give her fool another moment — so she thought, but she was giving it to herself; and as she delayed she was in danger of melting in his arms.

"What does the world look like to you, my darling? You are in it for the first time. You were born but a moment ago. It is dark, that you may not be blinded before you have used your eyes. These are your eyes, dear eyes that do not yet know their purpose; they are for looking at me, little Alice, and mine are for looking into yours. I cannot see you; I have never seen the face of my love — oh, my love, come into the light that I may see your face."

They did not move. Her head had fallen on his shoulder. She was to give it but a moment, and then —— But the moment had passed and still her hair pressed his cheek. Her eyes were closed. He seemed to have found the way to woo her. Neither of them spoke. Suddenly they

jumped apart. Lady Pippinworth stole to door. They held their breath and listened.

It was not so loud now, but it was distii heard. It had been heavy breathing, and nov was trying to check it and half succeeding– at the cost of little cries. They both kn was a woman, and that she was in the arbour, c other side of the little table. She must have there when they came in.

"Who is that?"

There was no answer to him save the ch breathing and another broken cry. She m and it helped him to see vaguely the outline girl who seemed to be drawing back from h terror. He thought she was crouching now farthest corner.

"Come away," he said. But Lady Pippin would not let him go. They must know wh woman was. He remembered that a match usually lay on the tables of those arbour groped until he found one.

"Who are you?"

He struck a match. They were those F matches that play an infernal interlude befo ginning to burn. While he waited he kne she was begging him, with her hands and cries that were too little to be words, not t its light on her. But he did.

Then she ceased to cower. The girlish d

t had been hers so long came running back to
r. As she faced him there was even a crooked
ile upon her face.

"I woke up," she said, as if the words had no
aning to herself, but might have some to him.

The match burned out before he spoke, but his
e was terrible. "Grizel!" he said, appalled;
l then, as if the discovery was as awful to her as
him, she uttered a cry of horror and sped out
to the night. He called her name again, and
ang after her; but the hand of another woman
tained him.

"Who is this girl?" Lady Pippinworth de-
nded fiercely; but he did not answer. He
coiled from her with a shudder that she was not
kely to forget, and hurried on. All that night he
arched for Grizel in vain.

CHAPTER XXX

THE LITTLE GODS DESERT HIM

And all next day he searched like a man whose eyes would never close again. She had not passed the night in any inn or village house of St. Gian; of that he made certain by inquiries from door to door. None of the guides had seen her, though they are astir so late and so early, patiently waiting at the hotel doors to be hired, that there seems to be no night for them—darkness only, that blots them out for a time as they stand waiting. At all hours there is in St. Gian the tinkle of bells, the clatter of hoofs, the crack of a whip, dust in retreat; but no coachman brought him news. The streets were thronged with other coachmen on foot looking into every face in quest of some person who wanted to return to the lowlands, but none had looked into her face.

Within five minutes of the hotel she might have been on any of half a dozen roads. He wandered or rushed along them all for a space, and came back. One of them was short and ended in the lake. All through that long and beautiful day this

erable man found himself coming back to the d that ended in the lake.

There were moments when he cried to himself at it was an apparition he had seen and heard. e had avoided his friends all day; of the English-eaking people in St. Gian one only knew why he as distraught, and she was the last he wished to peak to; but more than once he nearly sought her o say, "Partner in my shame, what did you see? what did you hear?" In the afternoon he had a etter from Elspeth telling him how she was enjoy-ng her holiday by the sea, and mentioning that David was at that moment writing to Grizel in Thrums. But was it, then, all a dream? he cried, nearly convinced for the first time, and he went into the arbour saying determinedly that it was a dream; and in the arbour, standing primly in a corner, was Grizel's umbrella. He knew that umbrella so well! He remembered once being by while she replaced one of its ribs so deftly that he seemed to be looking on at a surgical operation. The old doctor had given it to her, and that was why she would not let it grow old before she was old herself. Tommy opened it now with trembling hands and looked at the little bits of Grizel on it: the beautiful stitching with which she had coaxed the slits to close again; the one patch, so artful that she had clapped her hands over it. And he fell on his knees and kissed these little bits of

Grizel, and called her "beloved," and cried to
gods to give him one more chance.

"I woke up." It was all that she had said.
was Grizel's excuse for inconveniencing him. S
had said it apologetically and as if she did n
quite know how she came to be there herself. Th
was no look of reproach on her face while the mat
burned; there had been a pitiful smile, as if s
was begging him not to be very angry w
her; and then when he said her name she gave t
little cry as if she had recognized herself, and st
away. He lived that moment over and o
again, and she never seemed to be horror-stricl
until he cried "Grizel!" when her recognition of l
self made her scream. It was as if she had wake
up, dazed by the terrible things that were be
said, and then, by the light of that one w
"Grizel," suddenly knew who had been listen
to them.

Did he know anything more? He pressed
hands harshly on his temples and thought.
knew that she was soaking wet, that she had pr
ably sought the arbour for protection from the r
and that, if so, she had been there for at least f
hours. She had wakened up. She must have fa
asleep, knocked down by fatigue. What fati
it must have been to make Grizel lie there
hours he could guess, and he beat his brow
anguish. But why she had come he could

guess. "Oh, miserable man, to seek for reasons," he cried passionately to himself, "when it is Grizel — Grizel herself — you should be seeking for!"

He walked and ran the round of the lake, and it was not on the bank that his staring eyes were fixed.

At last he came for a moment upon her track. The people of an inn six miles from St. Gian remembered being asked yesterday by an English miss, walking alone, how far she was from Bad-Platten. She was wearing something brown, and her boots were white with dust, and these people had never seen a lady look so tired before; when she stood still she had to lean against the wall. They said she had red-hot eyes.

Tommy was in an einspänner now, the merry conveyance of the country and more intoxicating than its wines, and he drove back through St. Gian to Bad-Platten, where again he heard from Grizel, though he did not find her. What he found was her telegram from London: "I am coming. GRIZEL." Why had she come? why had she sent that telegram? what had taken her to London? He was not losing time when he asked himself distractedly these questions, for he was again in his gay carriage and driving back to the wayside inn. He spent the night there, afraid to go farther lest he should pass her in the darkness; *for he had decided* that, if alive, she was on this

road. That she had walked all those forty ı uphill seemed certain, and apparently the be could hope was that she was walking back. had probably no money to enable her to tak diligence. Perhaps she had no money with ı to buy food. It might be that while he lay ing in bed she was somewhere near, dying foı of a franc.

He was off by morning light, and several that day he heard of her, twice from peopl had seen her pass both going and coming, a knew it must be she when they said she r her arms as she walked. Oh, he knew wl rocked her arms! Once he thought he had her. He heard of an English lady who was ill in the house of a sawmiller, whose doı know the dogs of these regions, but not the pı had found her prostrate in the wood, some di from the highroad. Leaving his einspänn village, Tommy climbed down the mountai to this little house, which he was long i covering. It was by the side of a roaring and he arrived only an hour too late. Th had certainly been Grizel; but she was gone. sawyer's wife described to him how her hu had brought her in, and how she seemed sc and bewildered that she fell asleep while they questioning her. She held her hands over he *to shut out* the noise of the river, which seem

rify her. So far as they could understand, she d them that she was running away from the er. She had been sleeping there for three hours, d was still asleep when the good woman went f to meet her husband; but when they returned e was gone.

He searched the wood for miles around, crying r name. The sawyer and some of his fellow-orkers left the trees they were stripping of bark help him, and for hours the wood rang with Grizel, Grizel!" All the mountains round took p the cry; but there never came an answer. This ng delay prevented his reaching the railway ter-inus until noon of the following day, and there e was again too late. But she had been here. He traced her to that hotel whence we saw her set-ng forth, and the portier had got a ticket for her r London. He had talked with her for some ttle time, and advised her, as she seemed so tired, remain there for the night. But she said she ust go home at once. She seemed to be passion-ely desirous to go home, and had looked at him spiciously, as if fearing he might try to hold her ck. He had been called away, and on returning d seen her disappearing over the bridge. He d called to her, and then she ran as if afraid he as pursuing her. But he had observed her after-rds in the train.

So she was not without money, and she was on

her way home! The relief it brought him came to the surface in great breaths, and at first every one of them was a prayer of thankfulness. Yet in time they were triumphant breaths. Translated into words, they said that he had got off cheaply for the hundredth time. His little gods had saved him again, as they had saved him in the arbour by sending Grizel to him. He could do as he liked, for they were always there to succour him; they would never desert him — never. In a moment of fierce elation he raised his hat to them, then seemed to see Grizel crying "I woke up," and in horror of himself clapped it on again. It was but a momentary aberration, and is recorded only to show that, however remorseful he felt afterwards, there was life in our Tommy still.

The train by which he was to follow her did not leave until evening, and through those long hours he was picturing, with horrible vividness and pain, the progress of Grizel up and down that terrible pass. Often his shoulders shook in agony over what he saw, and he shuddered to the teeth. He would have walked round the world on his knees to save her this long anguish! And then again it was less something he saw than something he was writing, and he altered it to make it more dramatic. "I woke up." How awful that was! *but in this* new scene she uttered no words. Lady *Pippinworth* was in his arms when they heard a

e cry, so faint that a violin string makes as much
n when it snaps. In a dread silence he lit a
ch, and as it flared the figure of a girl was seen
n the floor. She was dead; and even as he
w that she was dead he recognized her.
ize!!" he cried. The other woman who had
d him from his true love uttered a piercing
am and ran towards the hotel. When she re-
ed with men and lanterns there was no one in
arbour, but there were what had been a man
a girl. They lay side by side. The startled
okers unbared their heads. A solemn voice
, "In death not divided."

He was not the only occupant of the hotel read-
room as he saw all this, and when his head fell
ard and he groaned, the others looked up from
r papers. A lady asked if he was unwell.

I have had a great shock," he replied in a daze,
ing his hand across his forehead.

Something you have seen in your paper?"
ired a clergyman who had been complaining
there was no news.

People I knew," said Tommy, not yet certain
h world he was in.

Dead?" the lady asked sympathetically.

I knew them well," he said, and staggered into
fresh air.

oor dog of a Tommy! He had been a total
ainer from sentiment, as one may say, for sixty

hours, and this was his only glass. It was the nobler Tommy, sternly facing facts, who by and by stepped into the train. He even knew why he was going to Thrums. He was going to say certain things to her; and he said them to himself again and again in the train, and heard her answer. The words might vary, but they were always to the same effect.

"Grizel, I have come back!"

He saw himself say these words, as he opened her door in Gavinia's little house. And when he had said them he bowed his head.

At his sudden appearance she started up; then she stood pale and firm.

"Why have you come back?"

"Not to ask your forgiveness," he replied hoarsely; "not to attempt to excuse myself; not with any hope that there remains one drop of the love you once gave me so abundantly. I want only, Grizel, to put my life into your hands. I have made a sorry mess of it myself. Will you take charge of what may be left of it? You always said you were ready to help me. I have come back, Grizel, for your help. What you were once willing to do for love, will you do for pity now?"

She turned away her head, and he went nearer her. "There was always something of the mother in your love, Grizel; but for that you would never

e borne with me so long. A mother, they say, never quite forget her boy — oh, Grizel, is it e? I am the prodigal come back. Grizel, be- ed, I have sinned and I am unworthy, but I am l your boy, and I have come back. Am I to sent away?"

At the word "beloved" her arms rocked impul- ely. "You must not call me that," she said.

"Then I am to go," he answered with a shud- r, "for I must always call you that; whether I n with you or away, you shall always be beloved me."

"You don't love me!" she cried. "Oh, do ou love me at last!" And at that he fell upon his nees.

"Grizel, my love, my love!"

"But you don't want to be married," she said.

"Beloved, I have come back to ask you on my knees to be my wife."

"That woman ——"

"She was a married woman, Grizel."

"Oh, oh, oh!"

"And now you know the worst of me. It is the whole truth at last. I don't know why you took that terrible journey, dear Grizel, but I do know that you were sent there to save me. Oh, my love, you have done so much, will you do no more?"

And so on, till there came a time when his head

was on her lap and her hand caressing it, and was whispering to her boy to look up and se crooked smile again.

He passed on to the wedding. All the tin tween seemed to be spent in his fond entreat hasten the longed-for day. How radiant she l in her bridal gown! "Oh, beautiful one, ar really mine? Oh, world, pause for a mome look at the woman who has given herself to

"My wife — this is my wife!" They w London now; he was showing her to L How he swaggered! There was a perpetua ogy on her face; it begged people to excu for looking so proudly at her. It was a c apology, and he hurried her into dark plac kissed it.

Do you see that Tommy was doing all t Grizel and pretending to her that it was fo self? He was passionately desirous of r amends, and he was to do it in the most ge way. Perhaps he believed when he seer enter her room saying, "Grizel, I have come that she loved him still; perhaps he knew t did not love in the way he said; perhaps he remorseful man making splendid atonemen never should she know these things; tend he had begun he would go on to the end. at last is a Tommy worth looking at, and he l

Yet as he drew near Thrums, after almo

Only two days of continuous travel, many a shiver went down his back, for he could not be sure that he should find Grizel here; he sometimes seemed to see her lying ill at some wayside station in Switzerland, in France; everything that could have happened to her he conceived, and he moved restlessly in the carriage. His mouth went dry.

"Has she come back?"

The train had stopped for the taking of tickets, and his tremulous question checked the joy of Corp at sight of him.

"She 's back," Corp answered in an excited whisper; and oh, the relief to Tommy! "She came back by the afternoon train; but I had scarce a word wi' her, she was so awid to be hame. 'I am going home,' she cried, and hurried away up the brae. Ay, and there 's one queer thing."

"What?"

"Her luggage wasna in the van."

Tommy could smile at that. "But what sent her," he asked eagerly, "on that journey?"

Corp told him the little he knew. "But nobody kens except me and Gavinia," he said. "We pretend she gaed to London to see her father. We said he had wrote to her, wanting her to go to him. Gavinia said it would never do to let folk ken she had gaen to see you, and even Elspeth doesna ken."

"Is Elspeth back?"

"They came back yesterday."

Did David know the truth from Grizel? was what Tommy was asking himself now as he strode up the brae. But again he was in luck, for when he had explained away his abrupt return to Elspeth, and been joyfully welcomed by her, she told him that her husband had been in one of the glens all day. "He does not know that Grizel has come back," she said. "Oh," she exclaimed, "but you don't even know that she has been away! Grizel has been in London."

"Corp told me," said Tommy.

"And did he tell you why she had gone?"

"Yes."

"She came back an hour or two ago. Maggy Ann saw her go past. Fancy her seeing her father at last! It must have been an ordeal for her. I wonder what took place."

"I think I had better go and ask her," Tommy said. He was mightily relieved for Grizel's sake. No one need ever know now what had called her away except Corp and Gavinia, and even they thought she had merely been to London. How well the little gods were managing the whole affair! As he walked to Grizel's lodgings to say what he had been saying in the train, the thought came to him for a moment that as no one need ever know where she had been there was less *reason why* he should do this generous thing. But

put it from him with lofty disdain. Any effect had was to make him walk more firmly to his rifice, as if to show all ignoble impulses that y could find no home in that swelling breast. e was pleased with himself, was Tommy.

"Grizel, I have come back." He said it to the ght, and bowed his head. He said it with head companiment to Grizel's lighted window. He id it to himself as he reached the door. He ver said it again.

For Gavinia's first words were: "It's you, Mr. ndys! Wherever is she? For mercy's sake, nna say you've come without her!" And hen he blinked at this, she took him roughly by e arm and cried, "Wherever's Grizel?"

"She is here, Gavinia."

"She's no here."

"I saw her light."

"You saw my light."

"Gavinia, you are torturing me. She came ck to-day."

"What makes you say that? You're dream- g. She hasna come back."

"Corp saw her come in by the afternoon train. e spoke to her."

Gavinia shook her head incredulously. "You're st imagining that," she said.

"He told me. Gavinia, I must see for myself." e stared after him as he went up the stairs.

"You are very cruel, Gavinia," he said, when he came down. "Tell me where she is."

"May I be struck, Mr. Sandys, if I've seen or heard o' her since she left this house eight days syne." He knew she was speaking the truth. He had to lean against the door for support. "It canna be so bad as you think," she cried in pity. "If you're sure Corp said he saw her, she maun hae gone to the doctor's house."

"She is not there. But Elspeth knew she had come back. Others have seen her besides Corp. My God, Gavinia! what can have happened?"

In little more than an hour he knew what had happened. Many besides himself, David among them towards the end, were engaged in the search. And strange stories began to fly about like night-birds; you will not search for a missing woman without rousing them. Why had she gone off to London without telling anyone? Had Corp concocted that story about her father to blind them? Had she really been as far as London? Have you seen Sandys? — he's back. It's said Corp telegraphed to him to Switzerland that she had disappeared. It's weel kent Corp telegraphed. Sandys came at once. He is in a terrible state. Look how white he is aneath that lamp. What *garred* them telegraph for him? How is it he is *in sic a state*? Fond o' her, was he? Yea, yea,

even after she gave him the go-by. Then it's a weary Sabbath for him, if half they say be true. What do they say? They say she was queer when she came back. Corp doesna say that. Maybe no; but Francie Crabb does. He says he met her on the station brae and spoke to her, and she said never a word, but put up her hands like as if she feared he was to strike her. The Dundas lassies saw her frae their window, and her hands were at her ears as if she was trying to drown the sound o' something. Do you mind o' her mother? They say she was looking terrible like her mother.

It was only between the station and Gavinia's house that she had been seen, but they searched far afield. Tommy, accompanied by Corp, even sought for her in the Den. Do you remember the long, lonely path between two ragged little dykes that led from the Den to the house of the Painted Lady? It was there that Grizel had lived with her mamma. The two men went down that path, which is oppressed with trees. Elsewhere the night was not dark, but, as they had known so well when they were boys, it is always dark after evenfall in the Double Dykes. That is the legacy of the Painted Lady. Presently they saw the house — scarcely the house, but a lighted window. Tommy remembered the night when as a boy, Elspeth crouching beside him, he had peered in fearfully at that corner window on Grizel and her mamma,

and the shuddersome things he had seen. He shuddered at them again.

"Who lives there now?" he asked.

"Nobody. It's toom."

"There is a light."

"Some going-about body. They often tak' bilbie in toom houses, and that door is without a lock; it's keepit close wi' slipping a stick aneath it. Do you mind how feared we used to be at that house?"

"She was never afraid of it."

"It was her hame."

He meant no more than he said, but suddenly they both stopped dead.

"It's no possible," Corp said, as if in answer to a question. "It's no possible," he repeated beseechingly.

"Wait for me here, Corp."

"I would rather come wi' you."

"Wait here!" Tommy said almost fiercely, and he went on alone to that little window. It had needed an effort to make him look in when he was here before, and it needed a bigger effort now. But he looked.

What light there was came from the fire, and whether she had gathered the logs or found them in the room no one ever knew. A vagrant stated afterwards that he had been in the house some days before and left his match-box in it.

By this fire Grizel was crouching. She was comparatively tidy and neat again; the dust was gone from her boots, even. How she had managed to do it no one knows, but you remember how she loved to be neat. Her hands were extended to the blaze, and she was busy talking to herself.

His hand struck the window heavily, and she looked up and saw him. She nodded, and put her finger to her lips as a sign that he must be cautious. She had often, in the long ago, seen her mother signing thus to an imaginary face at the window — the face of the man who never came.

Tommy went into the house, and she was so pleased to see him that she quite simpered. He put his arms round her, and she lay there with a little giggle of contentment. She was in a plot of heat.

"Grizel! Oh, my God!" he said, "why do you look at me in that way?"

She passed her hand across her eyes, like one trying to think.

"I woke up," she said at last. Corp appeared at the window now, and she pointed to him in terror. Thus had she seen her mother point, in the long ago, at faces that came there to frighten her.

"Grizel," Tommy entreated her, "you know who I am, don't you?"

She said his name at once, but her eyes were on

the window. "They want to take me away," she whispered.

"But you must come away, Grizel. You must come home."

"This is home," she said. "It is sweet."

After much coaxing, he prevailed upon her to leave. With his arm round her, and a terrible woe on his face, he took her to the doctor's house. She had her hands over her ears all the way. She thought the white river and the mountains and the villages and the crack of whips were marching with her still.

CHAPTER XXXI

"THE MAN WITH THE GREETIN' EYES"

many days she lay in a fever at the doctor's se, seeming sometimes to know where she was, more often not, and night after night a man with drawn face sat watching her. They entreated, they ced him to let them take his place; but from his om he heard her moan or speak, or he thought heard her, or he heard a terrible stillness, and he ole back to listen; they might send him away, ut when they opened the door he was there, with is drawn face. And often they were glad to see im, for there were times when he alone could nterpret her wild demands and soothe those staring yes.

Once a scream startled the house. Someone had truck a match in the darkened chamber, and she ought she was in an arbour in St. Gian. They ad to hold her in her bed by force at times; she ad such a long way to walk before night, she aid.

She would struggle into a sitting posture and ut her hands over her ears.

Her great desire was not to sleep. "I should wake up," she explained fearfully.

She took a dislike to Elspeth, and called her "Alice."

These ravings, they said to each other, must have reference to what happened to her when she was away, and as they thought he knew no more of her wanderings than they, everyone marvelled at the intuition with which he read her thoughts. It was he who guessed that the striking of matches somehow terrified her; he who discovered that it was a horrid roaring river she thought she heard, and he pretended he heard it too, and persuaded her that if she lay very still it would run past. Nothing she said or did puzzled him. He read the raving of her mind, they declared admiringly, as if he held the cipher to it.

"And the cipher is his love," Mrs. McLean said, with wet eyes. In the excitement of those days Elspeth talked much to her of Tommy's love for Grizel, and how she had refused him, and it went round the town with embellishments. It was generally believed now that she really had gone to London to see her father, and that his heartless behaviour had unhinged her mind.

By David's advice, Corp and Gavinia did not contradict this story. It was as good as another, he told them, and better than the truth.

But what was the truth? they asked greedily.

"Oh, that he is a noble fellow," David replied mly.

They knew that, but ——

He would tell them no more, however, though knew all. Tommy had made full confession the doctor, even made himself out worse than was, as had to be his way when he was not aking himself out better.

"And I am willing to proclaim it all from the arket-place," he said hoarsely, "if that is your ish."

"I daresay you would almost enjoy doing that," id David, rather cruelly.

"I daresay I should," Tommy said, with a gulp, nd went back to Grizel's side. It was not, you ay be sure, to screen him that David kept the ecret; it was because he knew what many would y of Grizel if the nature of her journey were evealed. He dared not tell Elspeth, even; for ink of the woe to her if she learned that it was er wonderful brother who had brought Grizel to is pass! The Elspeths of this world always have me man to devote himself to them. If the ommies pass away, the Davids spring up. For y own part, I think Elspeth would have found me excuse for Tommy. He said so himself to e doctor, for he wanted her to be told.

"Or you would find the excuse for her in time," avid responded.

"Very likely," Tommy said. He was humi
enough now, you see. David could say one thi
only which would rouse him, namely, that Gr
was not to die in this fever; and for long it see
impossible to say that.

"Would you have her live if her mind rer
affected?" he asked; and Tommy said firmly,"

"You think, I suppose, that then you w
have less for which to blame yourself!"

"I suppose that is it. But don't waste tir
me, Gemmell, when you have her life to sa
you can."

Well, her life was saved, and Tommy's m
had more to do with it than David's skill. I
admitted it; the town talked of it. "I aye
he would find a wy," Corp said, though h
been among the most anxious. He and
Latta were the first admitted to see her, whe
was able once more to sit in a chair. The
been told to ask her no questions. She c
pleasantly to them, and they thought sh
quite her old self. They wondered to see T
still so sad-eyed. To Ailie she spoke freely
illness, though not of what had occasioned i
told her almost gleefully that David had pro
to let her sew a little next week. There w
thing only that surprised Ailie. Grizel ha
that as soon as she was a little stronger sl
going home.

"Does she mean to her father's house?" Ailie asked.

This was what started the report that, touched no doubt by her illness, Grizel's unknown father had, after all, offered her a home. They discovered, however, what Grizel meant by home when, one afternoon, she escaped, unseen, from the doctor's house, and was found again at Double Dykes, very indignant because someone had stolen the furniture.

She seemed to know all her old friends except Elspeth, who was still Alice to her. Seldom now did she put her hands over her ears, or see horrible mountains marching with her. She no longer remembered, save once or twice when she woke up, that she had ever been out of Thrums. To those who saw her casually she was Grizel — gone thin and pale and weak intellectually, but still the Grizel of old, except for the fixed idea that Double Dykes was her home.

"You must not humour her in that delusion," David said sternly to Tommy; "when we cease to fight it we have abandoned hope."

So the weapon he always had his hand on was taken from Tommy, for he would not abandon hope. He fought gallantly. It was always he who brought her back from Double Dykes. She would not leave it with any other person, but she *came away with him.*

"It's because she's so fond o' him," Corp sa
But it was not. It was because she feared as all knew who saw them together. They seen together a great deal when she was able out. Driving seemed to bring back the mo to her eyes, so she walked, and it was alwa the help of Tommy's arm. "It's a most sight," the people said. They pitied hi more than her, for though she might be gaily to him and leaning heavily on hi could see that she mistrusted him. At the a sweet smile she would give him an ugly look.

"She's like a cat you've forced into yo they said, "and it lies quiet there, ready t the moment you let go your grip."

They wondered would he never wear never wearied. Day after day he was say same things to her, and the end was alway beginning. They came back to her entre she should be allowed to go home as cert they came back to the doctor's house.

"It is a long time, you know, Grizel, si lived at Double Dykes — not since you child."

"Not since I was a child," she said a quite understood.

"Then you went to live with your de *doctor, you* remember. What was his nar

"Dr. McQueen. I love him."

"But he died, and he left you his house to live in. It is your home, Grizel. He would be so grieved if he thought you did not make it your home."

"It is my home," she said proudly; but when they returned to it she was loath to go in. "I want to go home!" she begged.

One day he took her to her rooms in Corp's house, thinking her old furniture would please her; and that was the day when she rocked her arms joyously again. But it was not the furniture that made her so happy; it was Corp's baby.

"Oh, oh!" she cried in rapture, and held out her arms; and he ran into them, for there was still one person in Thrums who had no fear of Grizel.

"It will be a damned shame," Corp said huskily, "if that woman never has no bairns o' her ain."

They watched her crooning over the child, playing with him for a long time. You could not have believed that she required to be watched. She told him with hugs that she had come back to him at last; it was her first admission that she knew she had been away and a wild hope came to Tommy that along the road he could not take her she might be drawn by this little child.

She discovered a rent in the child's pinafore and must mend it at once. She ran upstairs, as a matter of course, to her work-box, and brought down a

needle and thread. It was quite as if she was home at last.

"But you don't live here now, Grizel," Tommy said, when she drew back at his proposal that they should go away; "you live at the doctor's house."

"Do I, Gavinia?" she said beseechingly.

"Is it here you want to bide?" Corp asked, and she nodded her head several times.

"It would be so much more convenient," she said, looking at the child.

"Would you take her back, Gavinia," Tommy asked humbly, "if she continues to want it?"

Gavinia did not answer.

"Woman!" cried Corp.

"I'm mortal wae for her," Gavinia said slowly "but she needs to be waited on hand and foot."

"I would come and do the waiting on her hand and foot, Gavinia," Tommy said.

And so it came about that a week afterward Grizel was reinstalled in her old rooms. Every morning when Tommy came to see her she asked him, icily how Alice was. She seemed to think that Alice, as she called her, was his wife. He always replied, "You mean Elspeth," and she assented, but only, it was obvious, because she feared to contradict him. To Corp and Gavinia she would still say passionately, "I want to go home" and probably add fearfully, "Don't tell him."

Yet though this was not home to her, she seem

be less unhappy here than in the doctor's house, l she found a great deal to do. All her old ll in needlework came back to her, and she ved for the child such exquisite garments that clapped her hands over them

One day Tommy came with a white face and ked Gavinia if she knew whether a small brown rcel had been among the things brought by izel from the doctor's house.

"It was in the box sent after me from Switzer- d," he told her, "and contained papers."

Gavinia had seen no such package.

"She may have hidden it," he said, and they rched, but fruitlessly. He questioned Grizel ntly, but questions alarmed her, and he de- ted

"It does not matter, Gavinia," he said, with a astly smile; but on the following Sunday, when rp called at the doctor's house, the thought "Have y found it?" leaped in front of all thought of izel. This was only for the time it takes to ask question with the eyes, however, for Corp was oking very miserable.

"I'm sweer to say it," he announced to Tommy d David, "but it has to be said. We canna keep r."

Evidently something had happened, and Tommy se to go to Grizel without even asking what it is. "Wait," David said, wrinkling his eye-

brows, "till Corp tells us what he means by t
I knew it might come, Corp. Go on."

"If it hadna been for the bairn," said Co
"we would hae tholed wi' her, however queer
was; but wi' the bairn I tell you it's no mo
You'll hae to tak' her awa'."

"Whatever she has been to others," Tom
said, "she is always an angel with the child. I
own mother could not be fonder of him."

"That's it," Corp replied emphatically. "S
no the mother o' him, but there's whiles when
thinks she is. We kept it frae you as long a
could."

"As long as she is so good to him ——" D
began.

"But at thae times she's not," said Corp. "
begins to shiver most terrible, as if she saw
some things in her mind, and syne we see
looking at him like as if she wanted to do h
mischief. She says he's her brat; she thinks
hers, and that he hasna been well come by."

Tommy's hands rose in agony, and ther
covered his face with them.

"Go on, Corp," David said hoarsely; "we
have it all."

"Sometimes," Corp went on painfully,
canna help being fond o' him, though she th
she shouldna hae had him. I've heard her sa
'My brat!' and syne birsing him closer to h

though her shame just made him mair to her. Women are so queer about thae things. I've seen her sitting by his cradle, moaning to hersel', 'I did so want to be good! It would be sweet to be good!' and never stopping rocking the cradle, and a' the time the tears were rolling down."

Tommy cried, "If there is any more to tell, Corp, be quick."

"There's what I come here to tell you. It was no langer syne than jimply an hour. We thocht the bairn was playing at the gavle-end, and that Grizel was up the stair. But they werena, and I gaed straight to Double Dykes. She wasna there, but the bairn was, lying greetin' on the floor. We found her in the Den, sitting by the burn-side, and she said we should never see him again, for she had drowned him. We're sweer, but you'll need to tak' her awa'."

"We shall take her away," David said, and when he and Tommy were left together he asked: "Do you see what it means?"

"It means that the horrors of her early days have come back to her, and that she is confusing her mother with herself."

David's hands were clenched. "That is not what I am thinking of. We have to take her away; they have done far more than we had any right to ask of them. Sandys, where are we to take her *to*?"

"Do even you grow tired of her?" Tommy cried.

David said between his teeth: "We hope there will soon be a child in this house, also. God forgive me, but I cannot bring her back here."

"She cannot be in a house where there is a child!" said Tommy, with a bitter laugh. "Gemmell, it is Grizel we are speaking of! Do you remember what she was?"

"I remember."

"Well, where are we to send her?"

David turned his pained eyes full on Tommy.

"No!" Tommy cried vehemently.

"Sandys," said David, firmly, "that is what it has come to. They will take good care of her." He sat down with a groan. "Have done with heroics," he said savagely, when Tommy would have spoken. "I have been prepared for this; there is no other way."

"I have been prepared for it, too," Tommy said, controlling himself; "but there is another way: I can marry her, and I am going to do it."

"I don't know that I can countenance that," David said, after a pause. "It seems an infernal shame."

"Don't trouble about me," replied Tommy, hoarsely; "I shall do it willingly."

And then it was the doctor's turn to laugh. "*Ycu!*" he said with a terrible scorn as he looked

Tommy up and down. "I was not thinking of you. All my thoughts were of her. I was thinking how cruel to her if some day she came to her right mind and found herself tied for life to the man who had brought her to this pass."

Tommy winced and walked up and down.

"Desire to marry her gone?" asked David, savagely.

"No," Tommy said. He sat down. "You have the key to me, Gemmell," he went on quietly. "I gave it to you. You know I am a man of sentiment only; but you are without a scrap of it yourself, and so you will never quite know what it is. It has its good points. We are a kindly people. I was perhaps pluming myself on having made an heroic proposal, and though you have made me see it just now as you see it, as you see it I shall probably soon be putting on the same grand airs again. Lately I discovered that the children who see me with Grizel call me 'the Man with the Greetin' Eyes.' If I have greetin' eyes it was real grief that gave them to me; but when I heard what I was called it made me self-conscious, and I have tried to look still more lugubrious ever since. It seems monstrous to you, but that, I believe, is the kind of thing I shall always be doing. But it does not mean that I feel no real remorse. They were greetin' eyes before I knew it, and though I *may pose* grotesquely as a fine fellow for

finding Grizel a home where there is no child can never be a child, I shall not cease, night day, from tending her. It will be a grim busi Gemmell, as you know, and if I am Sentin Tommy through it all, why grudge me my little strut?"

David said, "You can't take her to Lo

"I shall take her to wherever she wants t

"There is one place only she wants to and that is Double Dykes."

"I am prepared to take her there."

"And your work?"

"It must take second place now. I must it is the only thing I can do. If I could n living at anything else I would give up altogether."

"Why?"

"She would be pleased if she could unde and writing is the joy of my life — two re

But the doctor smiled.

"You are right," said Tommy. "I see really thinking what a fine picture of self-sac should make sitting in Double Dykes at a l

They talked of ways and means, and he admit that he had little money. But th book would bring in a good deal, David su

"The manuscript is lost," Tommy crushing down his agitation.

"Lost! When? Where?"

"I don't know. It was in the bag I left behind at St. Gian, and I supposed it was still in it when the bag was forwarded to me here. I did not look for more than a month. I took credit to myself for neglecting my manuscript, and when at last I looked it was not there. I telegraphed and wrote to the innkeeper at St. Gian, and he replied that my things had been packed at his request in presence of my friends there, the two ladies you know of. I wrote to them, and they replied that this was so, and said they thought they remembered seeing in the bottom of the bag some such parcel in brown paper as I described. But it is not there now, and I have given up all hope of ever seeing it again. No, I have no other copy. Every page was written half a dozen times, but I kept the final copy only."

"It is scarcely a thing anyone would steal."

"No; I suppose they took it out of the bag at St. Gian, and forgot to pack it again. It was probably flung away as of no account."

"Could it have been taken out on the way here?"

"The key was tied to the handle so that the custom officials might be able to open the bag. Perhaps they are fonder of English manuscripts than one would expect, or more careless of them."

"You can think of no other way in which it might have *disappeared*?"

"None," Tommy said; and then the doctor faced him squarely.

"Are you trying to screen Grizel?" he asked. "Is it true, what people are saying?"

"What are they saying?"

"That she destroyed it. I heard that yesterday, and told them your manuscript was in my house, as I thought it was. Was it she?"

"No, no. Gavinia must have started that story. I did look for the package among Grizel's things."

"What made you think of that?"

"I had seen her looking into my bag one day. And she used to say I loved my manuscripts too much ever to love her. But I am sure she did not do it."

"Be truthful, Sandys. You know how she always loved the truth."

"Well, then, I suppose it was she."

After a pause the doctor said: "It must be about as bad as having a limb lopped off."

"If only I had been offered that alternative!" Tommy replied.

"And yet," David mused, better pleased with him, "you have not cried out."

"Have I not! I have rolled about in agony, and invoked the gods, and cursed and whimpered; only I take care that no one shall see me."

"And that no one should know poor Grizel had *done this* thing. I admire you for that, Sandys."

"But it has leaked out, you see," Tommy said; "and they will all be admiring me for it at the wedding, and no doubt I shall be cocking my greetin' eyes at them to note how much they are admiring."

But when the wedding-day came he was not doing that. While he and Grizel stood up before Mr. Dishart, in the doctor's parlour, he was thinking of her only. His eyes never left her, not even when he had to reply "I do." His hand pressed hers all the time. He kept giving her reassuring little nods and smiles, and it was thus that he helped Grizel through.

Had Mr. Dishart understood what was in her mind he would not have married them. To her it was no real marriage; she thought they were tricking the minister, so that she should be able to go home. They had rehearsed the ceremony together many times, and oh, she was eager to make no mistake.

"If they were to find out!" she would say apprehensively, and then perhaps giggle at the slyness of it all. Tommy had to make merry with her, as if it was one of his boyish plays. If he was overcome with the pain of it, she sobbed at once and wrung her hands.

She was married in gray silk. She had made the dress herself, as beautifully as all her things were made. Tommy remembered how once, long

ago, she had told him, as a most exquisite secret, that she had decided on gray silk.

Corp and Gavinia and Ailie and Aaron Latta were the only persons asked to the wedding, and when it was over, they said they never saw anyone stand up by a woman's side looking so anxious to be her man; and I am sure that in this they did Tommy no more than justice.

It was a sad day to Elspeth. Could she be expected to smile while her noble brother did this great deed of sacrifice? But she bore up bravely, partly for his sake, partly for the sake of one unborn.

The ring was no plain hoop of gold; it was garnets all the way round. She had seen it on Elspeth's finger, and craved it so greedily that it became her wedding-ring. And from the moment she had it she ceased to dislike Elspeth, and pitied her very much, as if she thought happiness went with the ring. "Poor Alice!" she said when she saw Elspeth crying at the wedding, and having started to go away with Tommy, she came back to say again, "Poor, poor Alice!"

Corp flung an old shoe after them.

CHAPTER XXXII

TOMMY'S BEST WORK

thus was begun a year and a half of as devotion as remorseful man ever gave to ın. When she was asleep and he could not his mind would sometimes roam after aban- l things; it sought them in the night as a e beast steals forth for water to slake the thirst ny days. But if she stirred in her sleep they all dispelled; there was not a moment in ighteen months when he was twenty yards Grizel's side.

would not let himself lose hope. All the ; lost it. "The only thing you can do is to ur her," even David was reduced in time to ; but Tommy replied cheerily, "Not a bit

Every morning he had to begin at the place as on the previous morning, and he lways as ready to do it, and as patient, as if ere the first time.

think she is a little more herself to-day," he l say determinedly, till David wondered to im.

"She makes no progress, Sandys."

"I can at least keep her from slipping back."

And he did, and there is no doubt that this was what saved Grizel in the end. How he strove to prevent her slipping back! The morning was the time when she was least troubled, and had he humoured her then they would often have been easy hours for him. But it was the time when he tried most doggedly, with a gentleness she could not ruffle, to teach her the alphabet of who she was. She coaxed him to let her off those mental struggles; she turned petulant and sulky; she was willing to be good and sweet if he would permit her to sew or to sing to herself instead, or to sit staring at the fire: but he would not yield; he promised those things as the reward, and in the end she stood before him like a child at lessons.

"What is your name?" The catechism always began thus.

"Grizel," she said obediently, if it was a day when she wanted to please him.

"And my name?"

"Tommy." Once, to his great delight, she said, "Sentimental Tommy." He quite bragged about this to David.

"Where is your home?"

"Here." She was never in doubt about this, and it was always a pleasure to her to say it.

"Did you live here long ago?"

She nodded.

"And then did you live for a long time somewhere else?"

"Yes."

"Where was it?"

"Here."

"No, it was with the old doctor. You were his little housekeeper; don't you remember? Try to remember, Grizel; he loved you so much."

She tried to think. Her face was very painful when she tried to think. "It hurts," she said.

"Do you remember him, Grizel?"

"Please let me sing," she begged, "such a sweet song!"

"Do you remember the old doctor who called you his little housekeeper? He used to sit in that chair."

The old chair was among Grizel's many possessions that had been brought to Double Dykes, and her face lit up with recollection. She ran to the chair and kissed it.

"What was his name, Grizel?"

"I should love to know his name," she said wistfully.

He told her the name many times, and she repeated it docilely.

Or perhaps she remembered her dear doctor quite well to-day, and thought Tommy was some one in need of his services.

"He has gone into the country," she said, as she had so often said to anxious people at the door; "but he won't be long, and I shall give him your message the moment he comes in."

But Tommy would not pass that. He explained to her again and again that the doctor was dead, and perhaps she would remember, or perhaps, without remembering, she said she was glad he was dead.

"Why are you glad, Grizel?"

She whispered, as if frightened she might be overheard: "I don't want him to see me like this." It was one of the pathetic things about her that she seemed at times to have some vague understanding of her condition, and then she would sob. Her tears were anguish to him, but it was at those times that she clung to him as if she knew he was trying to do something for her, and that encouraged him to go on. He went over, step by step, the time when she lived alone in the doctor's house, the time of his own coming back, her love for him and his treatment of her, the story of the garnet ring, her coming to Switzerland, her terrible walk, her return; he would miss out nothing, for he was fighting for her. Day after day, month by month, it went on, and to-morrow, perhaps, she would insist that the old doctor and this man who asked *her so* many questions were one. And Tommy *argued* with her until he had driven that notion

to make way for another, and then he fought
nd so on and on all round the circle of her de-
ons, day by day and month by month.

He knew that he sometimes wrote while she
asleep, for she might start up from her bed or
n the sofa, and there he was, laying down his
to come to her. Her eyes were never open
any large fraction of a minute without his
owing, and immediately he went to her, nodding
d smiling lest she had wakened with some fear
on her. Perhaps she refused to sleep again un-
s he promised to put away those horrid papers
the night, and however intoxicating a point he
d reached in his labours, he always promised, and
pt his word. He was most scrupulous in keep-
g any promise he made her, and one great result
is that she trusted him implicitly. Whatever
hers promised, she doubted them.

There were times when she seemed to be cast-
g about in her mind for something to do that
ould please him, and then she would bring pieces
paper to him, and pen and ink, and tell him to
ite. She thought this very clever of her, and
pected to be praised for it.

But she might also bring him writing materials
times when she hated him very much. Then
ere would be sly smiles, even pretended affection,
her face, unless she thought he was not looking,
hen she cast him ugly glances. Her intention

was to trick him into forgetting her so that she might talk to herself or slip out of the room to the Den, just as her mother had done in the days when it was Grizel who had to be tricked. He would not let her talk to herself until he had tried endless ways of exorcising that demon by interesting her in some sort of work, by going out with her, by talking of one thing and another till at last a subject was lit upon that made her forget to brood.

But sometimes it seemed best to let her go to the Den, she was in such a quiver of desire to go. She hurried to it, so that he had to stride to keep up with her; and he said little until they got there, for she was too excited to listen. She was very like her mother again; but it was not the man who never came that she went in search of — it was a lost child. I have not the heart to tell of the pitiful scenes in the Den while Grizel searched for her child. They always ended in those two walking silently home, and for a day or two Grizel would be ill, and Tommy tended her, so that she was soon able to hasten to the Den again, holding out her arms as she ran.

"She makes no progress," David said.

"I can keep her from slipping back," Tommy still replied. The doctor marvelled, but even he did not know the half of all her husband did for Grizel. None could know half who was not there *by night*. Here, at least, was one day ending

placidly, they might say when she was in a tractable mood,— so tractable that she seemed to be one of themselves,— and Tommy assented brightly, though he knew, and he alone, that you could never be sure the long day had ended till the next began.

Often the happiest beginning had the most painful ending. The greatest pleasure he could give her was to take her to see Elspeth's baby girl, or that sturdy rogue, young Shiach, who could now count with ease up to seven, but swayed at eight, and toppled over on his way to ten; or their mothers brought them to her, and Grizel understood quite well who her visitors were, sometimes even called Elspeth by her right name, and did the honours of her house irreproachably, and presided at the tea-table, and was rapture personified when she held the baby Jean (called after Tommy's mother), and sat gaily on the floor, ready to catch little Corp when he would not stop at seven. But Tommy, whom nothing escaped, knew with what depression she might pay for her joy when they had gone. Despite all his efforts, she might sit talking to herself, at first of pleasant things and then of things less pleasant. Or she stared at her reflection in the long mirror and said: "Isn't she sweet!" or "She is not really sweet, and she did so want to be good!" Or instead of that she would suddenly go upon her knees and say, with clasped hands,

the childish prayer, "Save me from masterful men," which Jean Myles had told Tommy to teach Elspeth. No one could have looked less masterful at those times than Tommy, but Grizel did not seem to think so. And probably they had that night once more to search the Den.

"The children do her harm; she must not see them again," he decided.

"They give her pleasure at the time," David said. "It lightens your task now and then."

"It is the future I am thinking of, Gemmell. If she cannot progress, she shall not fall back. As for me, never mind me."

"Elspeth is in a sad state about you, though! And you can get through so little work."

"Enough for all our wants." (He was writing magazine papers only.)

"The public will forget you."

"They have forgotten me."

David was openly sorry for him now. "If only your manuscript had been saved!"

"Yes; I never thought the little gods would treat me so scurvily as that."

"Who?"

"Did I never tell you of my little gods? I so often emerged triumphant from my troubles, and so undeservedly, that I thought I was especially looked *after by* certain tricky spirits in return for the entertainment I gave them. My little gods, I called

hem, and we had quite a bowing acquaintance. But you see at the critical moment they flew away aughing."

He always knew that the lost manuscript was his great work. "My seventh wave," he called it; "and though all the conditions were favourable," he said, "I know that I could run to nothing more than little waves at present. As for rewriting that book, I can't; I have tried."

Yet he was not asking for commiseration. "Tell Elspeth not to worry about me. If I have no big ideas just now, I have some very passable little ones, and one in particular that——" He drew a great breath. "If only Grizel were better," that breath said, "I think Tommy Sandys could find a way of making the public remember him again."

So David interpreted it, and though he had been about to say, "How changed you are!" he did not say it.

And Tommy, who had been keeping an eye on her all this time, returned to Grizel. As she had been through that long year, so she was during the first half of the next; and day by day and night by night he tended her, and still the same scenes were enacted in infinite variety, and still he would not give in. Everything seemed to change with the seasons, except Grizel, and Tommy's devotion to *her*.

Yet you know that she recovered, ever afterwards to be herself again; and though it seemed to come in the end as suddenly as the sight may be restored by the removal of a bandage, I suppose it had been going on all the time, and that her reason was given back to her on the day she had strength to make use of it. Tommy was the instrument of her recovery. He had fought against her slipping backward so that she could not do it; it was as if he had built a wall behind her, and in time her mind accepted that wall as impregnable and took a forward movement. And with every step she took he pushed the wall after her, so that still if she moved it must be forward. Thus Grizel progressed imperceptibly as along a dark corridor towards the door that shut out the light, and on a day in early spring the door fell.

Many of them had cried for a shock as her only chance. But it came most quietly. She had lain down on the sofa that afternoon to rest, and when she woke she was Grizel again. At first she was not surprised to find herself in that room, nor to see that man nodding and smiling reassuringly as they had come out of the long dream with her, to make the awakening less abrupt.

He did not know what had happened. When he knew, a terror that this could not last seized him. He was concealing it while he answered her puzzled questions. All the time he was telling

her how they came to be there, he was watching in agony for the change.

She remembered everything up to her return to Thrums; then she walked into a mist.

"The truth," she begged of him, when he would have led her off by pretending that she had been ill only. Surely it was the real Grizel who begged for the truth. She took his hand and held it when he told her of their marriage. She cried softly, because she feared that she might again become as she had been; but he said that was impossible, and smiled confidently, and all the time he was watching in agony for the change.

"Do you forgive me, Grizel? I have always had a dread that when you recovered you would cease to care for me." He knew that this would please her if she was the real Grizel, and he was so anxious to make her happy for evermore.

She put his hand to her lips and smiled at him through her tears. Hers was a love that could never change. Suddenly she sat up. "Whose baby was it?" she asked.

"I don't know what you mean, Grizel," he said uneasily.

"I remember vaguely," she told him, "a baby in white whom I seemed to chase, but I could never catch her. Was it a dream only?"

"You are thinking of Elspeth's little girl, perhaps. *She was often* brought to see you."

"She is always laughing."

"The sweet!" Grizel rocked herself and smiled her crooked smile a crooked smile who was always laughing. remember her," she said. "It was as I seemed to see."

CHAPTER XXXIII

THE LITTLE GODS RETURN WITH A LADY

GRIZEL'S clear, searching eyes, that were always seeking for the truth, came back to her, and I seem to see them on me now, watching lest I shirk the end.

Thus I can make no pretence (to please you) that it was a new Tommy at last. We have seen how he gave his life to her during those eighteen months, but he could not make himself anew. They say we can do it, so I suppose he did not try hard enough; but God knows how hard he tried.

He went on trying. In those first days she sometimes asked him, "Did you do it out of love, or was it pity only?" And he always said it was love. He said it adoringly. He told her all that love meant to him, and it meant everything that he thought Grizel would like it to mean. When he ceased to ask this question he thought it was because he had convinced her.

They had a honeymoon by the sea. He insisted upon it with boyish eagerness, and as they walked

on the links or sat in their room he would exclaim ecstatically: "How happy I am! I wonder if there were ever two people quite so happy as you and I!"

And if he waited for an answer, as he usually did, she might smile lightly and say: "Few people have gone through so much."

"Is there any woman in the world, Grizel, with whom you would change places?"

"No, none," she said at once; and when he was sure of it, but never until he was sure, he would give his mind a little holiday; and then, perhaps, those candid eyes would rest searchingly upon him, but always with a brave smile ready should he chance to look up.

And it was just the same when they returned to Double Dykes, which they added to and turned into a comfortable home — Tommy trying to become a lover by taking thought, and Grizel not letting on that it could not be done in that way. She thought it was very sweet of him to try so hard — sweeter of him than if he really had loved her, though not, of course, quite so sweet to her. He was a boy only. She knew that, despite all he had gone through, he was still a boy. And boys cannot love. Oh, who would be so cruel as to ask a boy to love?

That Grizel's honeymoon should never end was *his* grand ambition, and he took elaborate precau-

tions against becoming a matter-of-fact husband. Every morning he ordered himself to gaze at her with rapture, as if he had wakened to the glorious thought that she was his wife.

"I can't help it, Grizel; it comes to me every morning with the same shock of delight, and I begin the day with a song of joy. You make the world as fresh and interesting to me as if I had just broken like a chicken through the egg-shell." He rose at the earliest hours. "So that I can have the longer day with you," he said gaily.

If when sitting at his work he forgot her for an hour or two he reproached himself for it afterwards, and next day he was more careful. "Grizel," he would cry, suddenly flinging down his pen, "you are my wife! Do you hear me, madam? You hear, and yet you can sit there calmly darning socks! Excuse me," he would say to his work, "while I do a dance."

He rose impulsively and brought his papers nearer her. With a table between them she was several feet away from him, which was more, he said, than he could endure.

"Sit down for a moment, Grizel, and let me look at you. I want to write something most splendiferous to-day, and I am sure to find it in your face. I have ceased to be an original writer; all the purple patches are cribbed from you."

He made a point of taking her head in his

hands and looking long at her with thoughts too deep for utterance; then he would fall on his knees and kiss the hem of her dress, and so back to his book again.

And in time it was all sweet to Grizel. She could not be deceived, but she loved to see him playing so kind a part, and after some sadness to which she could not help giving way, she put all vain longings aside. She folded them up and put them away like the beautiful linen, so that she might see more clearly what was left to her and how best to turn it to account.

He did not love her. "Not as I love him," she said to herself,—"not as married people ought to love; but in the other way he loves me dearly." By the "other way" she meant that he loved her as he loved Elspeth, and loved them both just as he had loved them when all three played in the Den.

"He would love me if he could." She was certain of that. She decided that love does not come to all people, as is the common notion; that there are some who cannot fall in love, and that he was one of them. He was complete in himself, she decided.

"Is it a pity for him that he married me? It would be a pity if he could love some other woman, but I am sure he could never do that. If he could *love* anyone it would be me, we both want it so *much*. He does not need a wife, but he needs

someone to take care of him — all men need that; and I can do it much better than any other person. Had he not married me he never would have married; but he may fall ill, and then how useful I shall be to him! He will grow old, and perhaps it won't be quite so lonely to him when I am there. It would have been a pity for him to marry me if I had been a foolish woman who asked for more love than he can give; but I shall never do that, so I think it is not a pity.

"Is it a pity for me? Oh, no, no, no!

"Is he sorry he did it? At times, is he just a weeny bit sorry?" She watched him, and decided rightly that he was not sorry the weeniest bit. It was a sweet consolation to her. "Is he really happy? Yes, of course he is happy when he is writing; but is he quite contented at other times? I do honestly think he is. And if he is happy now, how much happier I shall be able to make him when I have put away all my selfish thoughts and think only of him."

"The most exquisite thing in human life is to be married to one who loves you as you love him." There could be no doubt of that. But she saw also that the next best thing was the kind of love this boy gave to her, and she would always be grateful for the second best. In her prayers she thanked God for giving it to her, and promised *Him to try to merit* it; and all day and every day

she kept her promise. There could not have been a brighter or more energetic wife than Grizel. The amount of work she found to do in that small house which his devotion had made so dear to her that she could not leave it! Her gaiety! Her masterful airs when he wanted something that was not good for him! The artfulness with which she sought to help him in various matters without his knowing! Her satisfaction when he caught her at it, as clever Tommy was constantly doing! "What a success it has turned out!" David would say delightedly to himself; and Grizel was almost as jubilant because it was so far from being a failure. It was only sometimes in the night that she lay very still, with little wells of water on her eyes, and through them saw one — the dream of woman — whom she feared could never be hers. That boy Tommy never knew why she did not want to have a child. He thought that for the present she was afraid; but the reason was that she believed it would be wicked when he did not love her as she loved him. She could not be sure — she had to think it all out for herself. With little wells of sadness on her eyes, she prayed in the still night to God to tell her; but she could never hear His answer.

She no longer sought to teach Tommy how he *should* write. That quaint desire was abandoned *from* the day when she learned that she had

stroyed his greatest work. She had not de-
oyed it, as we shall see; but she presumed she
d, as Tommy thought so. He had tried to con-
al this from her to save her pain, but she had
und it out, and it seemed to Grizel, grown dis-
stful of herself, that the man who could bear
ch a loss as he had borne it was best left to write
he chose.

"It was not that I did not love your books,"
e said, "but that I loved you more, and I
ought they did you harm."

"In the days when I had wings," he answered,
d she smiled. "Any feathers left, do you
ink, Grizel?" he asked jocularly, and turned his
oulders to her for examination.

"A great many, sir," she said, "and I am glad.
used to want to pull them all out, but now I like
know that they are still there, for it means that
ou remain among the facts not because you can't
, but because you won't."

"I still have my little fights with myself," he
urted out boyishly, though it was a thing he had
ver meant to tell her, and Grizel pressed his hand
r telling her what she already knew so well.

The new book, of course, was "The Wandering
hild." I wonder whether any of you read it now?
our fathers and mothers thought a great deal of
at slim volume, but it would make little stir in
n age in which all the authors are trying who can

say "damn" loudest. It is but a reverie about a child who is lost, and his parents' search for him in terror of what may have befallen. But they find him in a wood singing joyfully to himself because he is free; and he fears to be caged again, so runs farther from them into the wood, and is running still, singing to himself because he is free, free, free. That is really all, but T. Sandys knew how to tell it. The moment he conceived the idea (we have seen him speaking of it to the doctor), he knew that it was the idea for him. He forgot at once that he did not really care for children. He said reverently to himself, "I can pull it off," and, as was always the way with him, the better he pulled it off the more he seemed to love them.

"It is myself who is writing at last, Grizel," he said, as he read it to her.

She thought (and you can guess whether she was right) that it was the book he loved rather than the children. She thought (and you can guess again) that it was not his ideas about children that had got into the book, but hers. But she did not say so; she said it was the sweetest of his books to her.

I have heard of another reading he gave. This was after the publication of the book. He had gone into Corp's house one Sunday, and Gavinia *was there* reading the work to her lord and master, *while* little Corp disported on the floor. She read

as if all the words meant the same thing, and it was more than Tommy could endure. He read for her, and his eyes grew moist as he read, for it was the most exquisite of his chapters about the lost child. You would have said that no one loved children quite so much as T. Sandys. But little Corp would not keep quiet, and suddenly Tommy jumped up and boxed his ears. He then proceeded with the reading, while Gavinia glowered and Corp senior scratched his head.

On the way home he saw what had happened, and laughed at the humour of it, then grew depressed, then laughed recklessly. "Is it Sentimental Tommy still?" he said to himself, with a groan. Seldom a week passed without his being reminded in some such sudden way that it was Sentimental Tommy still. "But she shall never know!" he vowed, and he continued to be half a hero.

His name was once more in many mouths. "Come back and be made of more than ever!" cried that society which he had once enlivened. "Come and hear the pretty things we are saying about you. Come and make the prettier replies that are already on the tip of your tongue; for oh, Tommy, you know they are! Bring her with you if you must; but don't you think that the nice, quiet country with the thingumbobs all in bloom would *suit her* best? It is essential that you

should run up to see your publisher, is it not? The men have dinners for you if you want them, but we know you don't. Your yearning eyes are on the ladies, Tommy; we are making up theatre parties of the old entrancing kind; you should see our new gowns; please come back and help us to put on our cloaks, Tommy; there is a dance on Monday—come and sit it out with us. Do you remember the garden-party where you said—Well, the laurel walk is still there; the beauties of two years ago are still here, and there are new beauties, and their noses are slightly tilted, but no man can move them; ha, do you pull yourself together at that? We were always the reward for your labours, Tommy; your books are move one in the game of making love to us; don't be afraid that we shall forget it is a game; we know it is, and that is why we suit you. Come and play in London as you used to play in the Den. It is all you need of women; come and have your fill, and we shall send you back refreshed. We are not asking you to be disloyal to her, only to leave her happy and contented and take a holiday."

He heard their seductive voices. They danced around him in numbers, for they knew that the more there were of them the better he would be pleased; they whispered in his ear and then ran away looking over their shoulders. But he would not budge.

There was one more dangerous than the rest. Her he saw before the others came and after they had gone. She was a tall, incredibly slight woman, with eyelashes that needed help, and a most disdainful mouth and nose, and she seemed to look scornfully at Tommy and then stand waiting. He was in two minds about what she was waiting for, and often he had a fierce desire to go to London to find out. But he never went. He played the lover to Grizel as before — not to intoxicate himself, but always to make life sunnier to her; if she stayed longer with Elspeth than the promised time, he became anxious and went in search of her. "I have not been away an hour!" she said, laughing at him, holding little Jean up to laugh at him. "But I cannot do without you for an hour," he answered ardently. He still laid down his pen to gaze with rapture at her and cry, "My wife!"

She wanted him to go to London for a change, and without her, and his heart leaped into his mouth to prevent his saying No; yet he said it, though in the Tommy way.

"Without you!" he exclaimed. "Oh, Grizel, do you think I could find happiness apart from you for a day? And could you let me go?" And he looked with agonized reproach at her, and sat down, clutching his head.

"It would be very hard to me," she said softly; "*but if the change* did you good ——"

"A change from you! Oh, Grizel, Grizel!"

"Or I could go with you?"

"When you don't want to go!" he cried huskily. "You think I could ask it of you!"

He quite broke down, and she had to comfort him. She was smiling divinely at him all the time, as if sympathy had brought her to love even the Tommy way of saying things. "I thought it would be sweet to you to see how great my faith in you is now," she said.

This was the true reason why generous Grizel had proposed to him to go. She knew he was more afraid than she of Sentimental Tommy, and she thought her faith would be a helping hand to him, as it was.

He had no regard for Lady Pippinworth. Of all the women he had dallied with, she was the one he liked the least, for he never liked where he could not esteem. Perhaps she had some good in her, but the good in her had never appealed to him, and he knew it, and refused to harbour her in his thoughts now; he cast her out determinedly when she seemed to enter them unbidden. But still he was vain. She came disdainfully and stood waiting. We have seen him wondering what she waited for; but though he could not be sure, and so was drawn to her, he took it as acknowledgment of his prowess and so was helped to run away.

To walk away would be the more exact term,

for his favourite method of exorcising this lady was to rise from his chair and take a long walk with Grizel. Occasionally if she was occupied (and a number of duties our busy Grizel found to hand!) he walked alone, and he would not let himself brood. Someone had once walked from Thrums to the top of the Law and back in three hours, and Tommy made several gamesome attempts to beat the record, setting out to escape that willowy woman, soon walking her down and returning in a glow of animal spirits. It was on one of these occasions, when there was nothing in his head but ambition to do the fifth mile within the eleven minutes, that he suddenly met her Ladyship face to face.

We have now come to the last fortnight of Tommy's life.

CHAPTER XXXIV

A WAY IS FOUND FOR TOMMY

THE moment for which he had tried to prepare himself was come, and Tommy gulped down his courage, which had risen suddenly to his mouth leaving his chest in a panic. Outwardly he seemed unmoved, but within he was beating to arms. "This is the test of us!" all that was good in him cried as it answered his summons.

They began by shaking hands, as is always the custom in the ring. Then, without any preliminary sparring, Lady Pippinworth immediately knocked him down; that is to say, she remarked, with a little laugh: "How very stout you are getting!"

I swear by all the gods that it was untrue. He had not got very stout, though undeniably he had got stouter. "How well you are looking!" would have been a very ladylike way of saying it, but his girth was best not referred to at all. Those who liked him had learned this long ago, and Grizel always shifted the buttons without comment.

Her malicious Ladyship had found his one weak spot at once. He had a reply ready for every other opening in the English tongue, but now he could writhe only.

Who would have expected to meet her here? he said at last feebly. She explained, and he had guessed it already, that she was again staying with the Rintouls; the castle, indeed, was not half a mile from where they stood.

"But I think I really came to see you," she informed him, with engaging frankness.

It was very good of her, he intimated stiffly; but the stiffness was chiefly because she was still looking in an irritating way at his waist.

Suddenly she looked up. To Tommy it was as if she had raised the siege. "Why aren't you nice to me?" she asked prettily.

"I want to be," he replied

She showed him a way. "When I saw you steaming towards the castle so swiftly," she said, dropping badinage, "the hope entered my head that you had heard of my arrival."

She had come a step nearer, and it was like an invitation to return to the arbour. "This is the test of us!" all that was good in Tommy cried once more to him.

"No, I had not heard," he replied, bravely if baldly. "I was taking a smart walk only."

"*Why so smart as that?*"

He hesitated, and her eyes left his face and travelled downward.

"Were you trying to walk it off?" she asked sympathetically.

He was stung, and replied in words that were regretted as soon as spoken: "I was trying to walk you off."

A smile of satisfaction crossed her impudent face.

"I succeeded," he added sharply.

"How cruel of you to say so, when you had made me so very happy! Do you often take smart walks, Mr. Sandys?"

"Often."

"And always with me?"

"I leave you behind."

"With Mrs. Sandys?"

Had she seemed to be in the least affected by their meeting it would have been easy to him to be a contrite man at once; any sign of shame on her part would have filled him with desire to take all the blame upon himself. Had she cut him dead, he would have begun to respect her. But she smiled disdainfully only, and stood waiting. She was still, as ever, a cold passion, inviting his warm ones to leap at it. He shuddered a little, but controlled himself and did not answer her.

"I suppose she is the lady of the arbour?" *Lady Pippinworth* inquired, with mild interest.

"She is the lady of my heart," Tommy replied valiantly.

"Alas!" said Lady Pippinworth, putting her hand over her own.

But he felt himself more secure now, and could even smile at the woman for thinking she was able to provoke him.

"Look upon me," she requested, "as a deputation sent north to discover why you have gone into hiding."

"I suppose a country life does seem exile to you," he replied calmly, and suddenly his bosom rose with pride in what was coming. Tommy always heard his finest things coming a moment before they came. "If I have retired," he went on windily, "from the insincerities and glitter of life in town," — but it was not his face she was looking at, it was his waist, — "the reason is obvious," he rapped out.

She nodded assent without raising her eyes.

Yet he still controlled himself. His waist, like some fair tortured lady of romance, was calling to his knighthood for defence, but with the truer courage he affected not to hear. "I am in hiding, as you call it," he said doggedly, "because my life here is such a round of happiness as I never hoped to find on earth, and I owe it all to my wife. If you don't believe me, ask Lord or Lady

Rintoul, or any other person in this country who knows her."

But her Ladyship had already asked, and l annoyed by the answer.

She assured Tommy that she believed he happy. "I have often heard," she said musi "that the stout people are the happiest."

"I am not so stout," he barked.

"Now I call that brave of you," said she, a ingly. "That is so much the wisest way to it. And I am sure you are right not to retu town after what you were; it would be a Somehow it"—and again her eyes were or wrong place—"it does not seem to go wit books. And yet," she said philosophically daresay you feel just the same?"

"I feel very much the same," he re warmingly.

"That is the tragedy of it," said she.

She told him that the new book had brough Tommy Society to life again. "And it coul hold its meetings with the old enthusiasm, coul she asked sweetly, "if you came back? Oh, I you act most judiciously. Fancy how melan it they had to announce that the society had wound up, owing to the stoutness of the Mas

Tommy's mouth opened twice before any could come out. "Take care!" he cried.

"Of what?" said she, curling her lip.

He begged her pardon. "You don't like me, Lady Pippinworth," he said, watching himself, "and I don't wonder at it; and you have discovered a way of hurting me of which you make rather unmerciful use. Well, I don't wonder at that, either. If I am —stoutish, I have at least the satisfaction of knowing that it gives you entertainment, and I owe you that amend and more." He was really in a fury, and burning to go on — "For I did have the whip-hand of you once, madam," etc., etc.; but by a fine effort he held his rage a prisoner, and the admiration of himself that this engendered lifted him into the sublime.

"For I so far forgot myself," said Tommy, in a glow, "as to try to make you love me. You were beautiful and cold; no man had ever stirred you; my one excuse is that to be loved by such as you was no small ambition; my fitting punishment is that I failed." He knew he had not failed, and so could be magnanimous. "I failed utterly," he said, with grandeur. "You were laughing at me all the time; if proof of it were needed, you have given it now by coming here to mock me. I thought I was stronger than you, but I was ludicrously mistaken, and you taught me a lesson I richly deserved; you did me good, and I thank you for it. Believe me, Lady Pippinworth, when I say that I admit my discomfiture, and remain *your very humble* and humbled servant."

Now was not that good of Tommy? You would think it still better were I to tell you what part of his person she was looking at while he said it.

He held out his hand generously (there was no noble act he could not have performed for her just now), but, whatever her Ladyship wanted, it was not to say good-bye. "Do you mean that you never cared for me?" she asked, with the tremor that always made Tommy kind.

"Never cared for you!" he exclaimed fervently. "What were you not to me in those golden days!" It was really a magnanimous cry, meant to help her self-respect, nothing more; but it alarmed the good in him, and he said sternly: "But of course that is all over now. It is only a sweet memory," he added, to make these two remarks mix.

The sentiment of this was so agreeable to him that he was half thinking of raising her hand chivalrously to his lips when Lady Pippinworth said:

"But if it is all over now, why have you still to walk me off?"

"Have you never had to walk me off?" said Tommy, forgetting himself, and, to his surprise, she answered, "Yes."

"But this meeting has cured me," she said, with *dangerous* graciousness.

"Dear Lady Pippinworth," replied Tommy, a-

ently, thinking that his generosity had touched er, "if anything I have said ——"

"It is not so much what you have said," she nswered, and again she looked at the wrong part f him.

He gave way in the waist, and then drew mself up. "If so little a thing as that helps ou ——" he began haughtily.

"Little!" she cried reproachfully.

He tried to go away. He turned. "There was time," he thundered.

"It is over," said she.

"When you were at my feet," said Tommy.

"It is over," she said.

"It could come again!"

She laughed a contemptuous No.

"Yes!" Tommy cried.

"Too stout," said she, with a drawl.

He went closer to her. She stood waiting disdainfully, and his arms fell.

"Too stout," she repeated.

"Let us put it in that way, since it pleases you," said Tommy, heavily. "I am too stout." He could not help adding, "And be thankful, Lady Pippinworth, let us both be thankful, that there is some reason to prevent my trying."

She bowed mockingly as he raised his hat. "I wish you well," he said, "and these are my last words to you"; and he retired, not without distinc-

tion. He retired, shall we say, as conscious of his waist as if it were some poor soldier he was supporting from a stricken field. He said many things to himself on the way home, and he was many Tommies, but all with the same waist. It intruded on his noblest reflections, and kept ringing up the worst in him like some devil at the telephone.

No one could have been more thankful that on the whole he had kept his passions in check. It made a strong man of him. It turned him into a joyous boy, and he tingled with hurrahs. Then suddenly he would hear that jeering bell clanging, "Too stout, too stout." "Take care!" he roared. Oh, the vanity of Tommy!

He did not tell Grizel that he had met her Ladyship. All she knew was that he came back to her more tender and kind, if that were possible, than he had gone away. His eyes followed her about the room until she made merry over it, and still they dwelt upon her. "How much more beautiful you are than any other woman I ever saw, Grizel!" he said. And it was not only true, but he knew it was true. What was Lady Pippinworth beside this glorious woman? what was her damnable coldness compared to the love of Grizel? Was he unforgivable, or was it some flaw in the making of him for which he was not responsible? With clenched hands he asked himself these questions. This love that all his books were about—

it was it? Was it a compromise between ction and passion countenanced by God for the tinuance of the race, made beautiful by Him re the ingredients are in right proportion, a er springing from a soil that is not all divine? sc exquisite a flower! he cried, for he knew his zel. But he could not love her. He gave her is affection, but his passion, like an outlaw, had to hunt alone.

Was it that? And if it was, did there remain im enough of humanity to give him the right sk a little sympathy of those who can love? Tommy in his despairing moods, and the ques- ought to find some place in his epitaph, which, the way, it is almost time to write.

On the day following his meeting with Lady pinworth came a note from Lady Rintoul invit- Grizel and him to lunch. They had been to toul once or twice before, but this time Tommy decisively, "We sha'n't go." He guessed who prompted the invitation, though her name was mentioned in it.

"Why not?" Grizel asked. She was always id that she kept Tommy too much to herself.

"Because I object to being disturbed during the eymoon," he replied lightly. Their honey- on, you know, was never to end. "They ld separate us for hours, Grizel. Think of it! , pooh! the thing is not to be thought of.

Tell her Ladyship courteously that she must be mad."

But though he could speak thus to Grizel, there came to him tempestuous desires to be by the side of the woman who could mock him and then stand waiting.

Had she shown any fear of him all would have been well with Tommy; he could have kept away from her complacently. But she had flung down the glove, and laughed to see him edge away from it. He knew exactly what was in her mind. He was too clever not to know that her one desire was to make him a miserable man; to remember how he had subdued and left her would be gall to Lady Pippinworth until she achieved the same triumph over him. How confident she was that he could never prove the stronger of the two again! What were all her mockings but a beckoning to him to come on? "Take care!" said Tommy between his teeth.

And then again horror of himself would come to his rescue. The man he had been a moment ago was vile to him, and all his thoughts were now heroic. You may remember that he had once taken Grizel to a seaside place; they went there again. It was Tommy's proposal, but he did not go to flee from temptation; however his worse nature had been stirred and his vanity pricked, he was too determinedly Grizel's to fear that in any

ce hour he might rush into danger. He wanted izel to come away from the place where she ays found so much to do for him, so that there ght be the more for him to do for her. And t week was as the time they had spent there be-re. All that devotion which had to be planned uld do for woman he did. Grizel saw him plan-ng it and never admitted that she saw. In the er years it was sweet to her to recall that ek and the hundred laboriously lover-like things ommy had done in it. She knew by this time at Tommy had never tried to make her love him, d that it was only when her love for him revealed elf in the Den that desire to save her pride made m pretend to be in love with her. This know-dge would have been a great pain to her once, t now it had more of pleasure in it, for it showed at even in those days he had struggled a little for er.

We must hasten to the end. Those of you who ok in the newspapers a quarter of a century ago now what it was, but none of you know why he limbed the wall.

They returned to Thrums in a week. They ad meant to stay longer, but suddenly Tommy anted to go back. Yes, it was Lady Pippin-orth who recalled him, but don't think too eanly of Tommy. It was not that he yielded one of those fierce desires to lift the gauntlet;

he had got rid of them in fair fight when her l
ter reached him, forwarded from Thrums. "D
you really think your manuscript was lost?"
said. That was what took Tommy back. Gri
did not know the reason; he gave her anoth
He thought very little about her that day. I
thought still less about Lady Pippinworth. H
could he think of anything but it? She had
evidently she had it; she must have stolen it fr
his bag. He could not even spare time to
nounce her. It was alive—his manuscript was al
and every moment brought him nearer to it.
was a miser, and soon his hands would be d
among the gold. He was a mother whose
mourned for dead, is knocking at the door.
was a swain, and his beloved's arms were
stretched to him. Who said that Tommy c
not love?

The ecstasies that came over him and would
let him sit still made Grizel wonder. "Is
book?" she asked; and he said it was a boo
such a book, Grizel! When he started for the c
next morning, she thought he wanted to be a
to think of the book. "Of it and you," he
and having started, he came back to kiss her ag
he never forgot to have an impulse to do
But all the way to the Spittal it was of his l
he thought, it was his book he was kissing.
heart sang within him, and the songs were so

to his beloved. To be worthy of his beautiful manuscript — he prayed for that as lovers do; that his love should be his, his alone, was as wondrous to him as to any of them.

But we are not noticing what proved to be the chief thing. Though there was some sun, the air was shrewd, and he was wearing the old doctor's coat. Should you have taken it with you, Tommy? It loved Grizel, for it was a bit of him; and what, think you, would the old doctor have cared for your manuscript had he known that you were gone out to meet that woman? It was cruel, no, not cruel, but thoughtless, to wear the old doctor's coat.

He found no one at the Spittal. The men were out shooting, and the ladies had followed to lunch with them on the moors. He came upon them, a gay party, in the hollow of a hill where was a spring suddenly converted into a wine-cellar; and soon the men, if not the ladies, were surprised to find that Tommy could be the gayest of them all. He was in hilarious spirits, and had a gallantly forgiving glance for the only one of them who knew why his spirits were hilarious. But he would not consent to remain to dinner. "The wretch is so hopelessly in love with his wife," Lady Rintoul said, flinging a twig of heather at him. It was one of the many trivial things said on that occasion and *long remembered*; the only person who after-

wards professed her inability to remember what Tommy said to her that day, and she to him, was Lady Pippinworth. "And yet you walked back to the castle with him," they reminded her.

"If I had known that anything was to happen," she replied indolently, "I should have taken more note of what was said. But as it was, I think we talked of our chance of finding white heather. We were looking for it, and that is why we fell behind you."

That was not why Tommy and her Ladyship fell behind the others, and it was not of white heather that they talked. "You know why I am here, Alice," he said, as soon as there was no one but her to hear him.

She was in as great tension at that moment as he, but more anxious not to show it. "Why do you call me that?" she replied, with a little laugh.

"Because I want you to know at once," he said, and it was the truth, "that I have no vindictive feelings. You have kept my manuscript from me all this time, but, severe though the punishment has been, I deserved it, yes, every day of it."

Lady Pippinworth smiled.

"You took it from my bag, did you not?" said Tommy.

"Yes."

"Where is it, Alice? Have you got it here?"

"No."

But you know where it is?"

"Oh, yes," she said graciously, and then it ned that nothing could ever disturb him again. enjoyed his boyish glee; she walked by his listening airily to it.

"Had there been a fire in the room that day I uld have burned the thing," she said without otion.

"It would have been no more than my deserts," mmy replied cheerfully.

"I did burn it three months afterwards," said she, nly.

He stopped, but she walked on. He sprang r her. "You don't mean that, Alice!"

"I do mean it."

With a gesture fierce and yet imploring, he npelled her to stop. "Before God, is this ?" he cried.

"Yes," she said, "it is true"; and, indeed, it was truth about his manuscript at last.

"But you had a copy of it made first. Say you !"

"I had not."

She seemed to have no fear of him, though his was rather terrible. "I meant to destroy it n the first," she said coldly, "but I was afraid I took it back with me to London. One I read in a paper that your wife was supposed ave burned it while she was insane. She was

insane, was she not? Ah, well, that is not my affair; but I burned it for her that afternoon."

They were moving on again. He stopped her once more.

"Why have you told me this?" he cried. "Was it not enough for you that I should think she did it?"

"No," Lady Pippinworth answered, "that was not enough for me. I always wanted you to know that I had done it."

"And you wrote that letter, you filled me with joy, so that you should gloat over my disappointment?"

"Horrid of me, was it not!" said she.

"Why did you not tell me when we met the other day?"

"I bided my time, as the tragedians say."

"You would not have told me," Tommy said, staring into her face, "if you had thought I cared for you. Had you thought I cared for you a little jot——"

"I should have waited," she confessed, "until you cared for me a great deal, and then I should have told you. That, I admit, was my intention."

She had returned his gaze smilingly, and as she strolled on she gave him another smile over her *shoulder*; it became a protesting pout almost *when she* saw that he was not accompanying her.

Tommy stood still for some minutes, his hands, his teeth, every bit of him that could close, tight clenched. When he made up on her, the devil was in him. She had been gathering a nosegay of wild flowers. "Pretty, are they not?" she said to him. He took hold of her harshly by both wrists. She let him do it, and stood waiting disdainfully; but she was less unprepared for a blow than for what came.

"How you love me, Alice!" he said in a voice shaking with passion.

"How I have proved it!" she replied promptly.

"Love or hate," he went on in a torrent of words, "they are the same thing with you. I don't care what you call it; it has made you come back to me. You tried hard to stay away. How you fought, Alice! but you had to come. I knew you would come. All this time you have been longing for me to go to you. You have stamped your pretty feet because I did not go. You have cried, 'He shall come!' You have vowed you would not go one step of the way to meet me. I saw you, I heard you, and I wanted you as much as you wanted me; but I was always the stronger, and I could resist. It is I who have not gone a step towards you, and it is my proud little Alice who has come all the way. Proud little Alice!—but she is to be my obedient little Alice now."

His passion hurled him along, and it had its

effect on her. She might curl her mouth as she chose, but her bosom rose and fell.

"Obedient?" she cried, with a laugh.

"Obedient!" said Tommy, quivering with his intensity. "Obedient, not because I want it, for I prefer you as you are, but because you are longing for it, my lady — because it is what you came here for. You have been a virago only because you feared you were not to get it. Why have you grown so quiet, Alice? Where are the words you want to torment me with? Say them! I love to hear them from your lips. I love the demon in you — the demon that burned my book. I love you the more for that. It was your love that made you do it. Why don't you scratch and struggle as the last time? I am half sorry that little Alice has to scratch and struggle no more."

"Go on," said little Alice; "you talk beautifully." But though her tongue could mock him all the rest of her was enchained.

"Whether I shall love you when you are tame," he went on with vehemence, "I don't know. I must take the risk of that. But I love you now. We were made for one another, you and I, and I love you, Alice — I love you and you love me. You love me, my peerless Alice, don't you? Say you love me. Your melting eyes are saying it. How you tremble, sweet Alice! Is that your way of saying it? I want to hear you say it.

re been longing to say it for two years. Come, re, say it now!"

It was not within this woman's power to resist n. She tried to draw away from him, but could t. She was breathing quickly. The mocking ht quivered on her face only because it had been ere so long. If it went out she would be help- is. He put his hands on her shoulders, and she as helpless. It brought her mouth nearer his. e was offering him her mouth.

"No," said Tommy, masterfully. "I won't kiss ou until you say it."

If there had not been a look of triumph in his es, she would have said it. As it was, she broke om him, panting. She laughed next minute, d with that laugh his power fell among the ather.

"Really," said Lady Pippinworth, "you are uch too stout for this kind of thing." She oked him up and down with a comic sigh. You talk as well as ever," she said condolingly, but heigh-ho, you don't look the same. I have ne the best I could for you for the sake of old nes, but I forgot to shut my eyes. Shall we go ?"

And they went on silently, one of them very hite. "I believe you are blaming me," her Lady- ip said, making a face, just before they overtook e others, "when you know it was your own fault

for"— she suddenly rippled — "for not waiting until it was too dark for me to see you!"

They strolled with some others of the party to the flower-garden, which was some distance from the house, and surrounded by a high wall studded with iron spikes and glass. Lady Rintoul cut him some flowers for Grizel, but he left them on a garden-seat — accidentally, everyone thought afterwards in the drawing-room when they were missed; but he had laid them down, because how could those degraded hands of his carry flowers again to Grizel? There was great remorse in him, but there was a shrieking vanity also, and though the one told him to be gone, the other kept him lagging on. They had torn him a dozen times from each other's arms before he was man enough to go.

It was gloaming when he set off, waving his hat to those who had come to the door with him. Lady Pippinworth was not among them; he had not seen her to bid her good-bye, nor wanted to, for the better side of him had prevailed — so he thought. It was a man shame-stricken and determined to kill the devil in him that went down that long avenue — so he thought.

A tall, thin woman was standing some twenty yards off, among some holly-trees. She kissed her hand mockingly to him, and beckoned and laughed when he stood irresolute. He thought he heard her cry, "Too stout!" He took some fierce steps

ards her. She ran on, looking over her shoul-, and he forgot all else and followed her. She ted into the flower-garden, pulling the gate to er her. It was a gate that locked when it closed, d the key was gone. Lady Pippinworth clapped r hands because he could not reach her. When e saw that he was climbing the wall she ran far-er into the garden.

He climbed the wall, but, as he was descending, ne of the iron spikes on the top of it pierced his oat, which was buttoned to the throat, and he ung there by the neck. He struggled as he hoked, but he could not help himself. He was nable to cry out. The collar of the old doctor's oat held him fast.

They say that in such a moment a man reviews ll his past life. I don't know whether Tommy id that; but his last reflection before he passed nto unconsciousness was "Serves me right!" Perhaps it was only a little bit of sentiment for the nd.

Lady Disdain came back to the gate, by and y, to see why he had not followed her. She creamed and then hid in the recesses of the gar-en. He had been dead for some time when they ound him. They left the gate creaking in the vening wind. After a long time a terrified woman tole out by it.

CHAPTER XXXV

THE PERFECT LOVER

TOMMY has not lasted. More than once since it became known that I was writing his life I have been asked whether there ever really was such a person, and I am afraid to inquire for his books at the library lest they are no longer there. A recent project to bring out a new edition, with introductions by some other Tommy, received so little support that it fell to the ground. It must be admitted that, so far as the great public is concerned, Thomas Sandys is done for.

They have even forgotten the manner of his death, though probably no young writer with an eye on posterity ever had a better send-off. We really thought at the time that Tommy had found a way.

The surmise at Rintoul, immediately accepted by the world as a fact, was that he had been climbing the wall to obtain for Grizel the flowers accidentally left in the garden, and it at once tipped *the tragedy* with gold. The newspapers, which *were in* the middle of the dull season, thanked

their gods for Tommy, and enthusiastically set to work on him. Great minds wrote criticisms of what they called his life-work. The many persons who had been the first to discover him said so again. His friends were in demand for the most trivial reminiscences. Unhappy Pym cleared £11 10*s*.

Shall we quote? It is nearly always done at this stage of the biography, so now for the testimonials to prove that our hero was without a flaw. A few specimens will suffice if we select some that are very like many of the others. It keeps Grizel waiting, but Tommy, as you have seen, was always the great one; she existed only that he might show how great he was. "Busy among us of late," says one, "has been the grim visitor who knocks with equal confidence at the doors of the gifted and the ungifted, the pauper and the prince, and twice in one short month has he taken from us men of an eminence greater perhaps than that of Mr. Sandys; but of them it could be said their work was finished, while his sun sinks tragically when it is yet day. Not by what his riper years might have achieved can this pure spirit now be judged, and to us, we confess, there is something infinitely pathetic in that thought. We would fain shut our eyes, and open them again at twenty years hence, with Mr. Sandys in the fulness of his powers. It is not *to be. What he* might have become is hidden

from us; what he was we know. He was litt[illegible] more than a stripling when he 'burst upon t[illegible] town' to be its marvel — and to die; a 'marv[illegible] lous boy' indeed; yet how unlike in character a[illegible] in the nobility of his short life, as in the mourn[illegible] yet lovely circumstances of his death, to that oth[illegible] Might-Have-Been who 'perished in his pride.' Our young men of letters have travelled far sinc[illegible] the days of Chatterton. Time was when a riotou[illegible] life was considered part of their calling — whe[illegible] they shunned the domestic ties and actually held that the consummate artist is able to love nothing but the creations of his fancy. It is such men as Thomas Sandys who have exploded that pernicious fallacy. . . .

"Whether his name will march down the ages is not for us, his contemporaries, to determine. He had the most modest opinion of his own work, and was humbled rather than elated when he heard it praised. No one ever loved praise less; to be pointed at as a man of distinction was abhorrent to his shrinking nature; he seldom, indeed, knew that he was being pointed at, for his eyes were ever on the ground. He set no great store by the remarkable popularity of his works. 'Nothing,' he has been heard to say to one of those gushing ladies who were his aversion, 'nothing will so certainly perish as the talk of the town.' It may be so, but if so, the greater the pity that he has gv

from among us before he had time to put the coping-stone upon his work. There is a beautiful passage in one of his own books in which he sees the spirits of gallant youth who died too young for immortality haunting the portals of the Elysian Fields, and the great shades come to the portal and talk with them. We venture to say that he is at least one of these."

What was the individuality behind the work? They discussed it in leading articles and in the correspondence columns, and the man proved to be greater than his books. His distaste for admiration is again and again insisted on and illustrated by many characteristic anecdotes. He owed much to his parents, though he had the misfortune to lose them when he was but a child. "Little is known of his father, but we understand that he was a retired military officer in easy circumstances. The mother was a canny Scotchwoman of lowly birth, conspicuous for her devoutness even in a land where it is everyone's birthright, and on their marriage, which was a singularly happy one, they settled in London, going little into society, the world forgetting, by the world forgot, and devoting themselves to each other and to their two children. Of these Thomas was the elder, and as the twig was early bent so did the tree incline. From his earliest years he was noted for the modesty which *those who* remember his boyhood in Scotland

(whither the children went to an uncle on the d
of their parents) still speak of with glistening e
In another column will be found some interes
recollections of Mr. Sandys by his old schoolma
Mr. David Cathro, M.A., who testifies with nat
pride to the industry and amiability of his fan
pupil. 'To know him,' says Mr. Cathro, 'wa
love him.'"

According to another authority, T. Sandys
his early modesty from his father, who was
very sweet disposition, and some instances of
modesty are given. They are all things
Elspeth did, but Tommy is now represented as
person who had done them. "On the other h
his strong will, singleness of purpose, and env
capacity for knowing what he wanted to b
were a heritage from his practical and saga
mother." "I think he was a little proud o
strength of will," writes the R.A. who painte
portrait (now in America), "for I remembe
anxiety that it should be suggested in the pict
But another acquaintance (a lady) replies:
was not proud of his strong will, but he lik
hear it spoken of, and he once told me the re
This strength of will was not, as is generally
posed, inherited by him; he was born witho
and acquired it by a tremendous effort. I beli
am the only person to whom he confided thi
he shrank from talk about himself, looking

s a form of that sentimentality which his soul
horred."

He seems often to have warned ladies against
s essentially womanish tendency to the senti-
ental. "It is an odious onion, dear lady," he
ould say, holding both her hands in his. If men
his presence talked sentimentally to ladies he was
irritated that he soon found a pretext for leav-
g the room. "Yet let it not be thought," says
ne Who Knew Him Well, "that because he was
sternly practical himself he was intolerant of the
utpourings of the sentimental. The man, in short,
flected the views on this subject which are so ad-
irably phrased in his books, works that seem to me
found one of their chief claims to distinction on
is, that at last we have a writer who can treat inti-
ately of human love without leaving one smear of
ie onion upon his pages."

On the whole, it may be noticed, comparatively
w ladies contribute to the obituary reflections,
for the simple reason," says a simple man, "that he
ent but little into female society. He who could
rite so eloquently about women never seemed to
now what to say to them. Ordinary tittle-tattle
om them disappointed him. I should say that to
im there was so much of the divine in women
iat he was depressed when they hid their wings."
his view is supported by Clubman, who notes
iat Tommy would never join in the somewhat

free talk about the other sex in which many i
indulge. "I remember," he says, "a man's di
at which two of those present, both persons of
nence, started a theory that every man wh
blessed or cursed with the artistic instinct ha
some period of his life wanted to marry a barm
Mr. Sandys gave them such a look that the
once apologized. Trivial, perhaps, but signific
On another occasion I was in a club smoking-r
when the talk was of a similar kind. Mr. Sa
was not present. A member said, with a la
'I wonder for how long men can be together
out talking gamesomely of women?' Before
answer could be given Mr. Sandys strolled in,
immediately the atmosphere cleared, as if som
had opened the windows. When he had gon
member addressed turned to him who had
pounded the problem and said, 'There is
answer — as long as Sandys is in the room.'"

"A fitting epitaph, this, for Thomas Sandys,'
the paper that quotes it, "if we could not f
better. Mr. Sandys was from first to last a
of character, but why when others falter w
always so sure-footed? It is in the answer t
question that we find the key to the books, a
the man who was greater than the books. H
the Perfect Lover. As he died seeking flowe
her who had the high honour to be his wife,
and always lived. He gave his [illegible] to h

our correspondent Miss (or Mrs.) Ailie McLean shows, in his earliest boyhood, and from this, his one romance, he never swerved. To the moment of his death all his beautiful thoughts were flowers plucked for her; his books were bunches of them gathered to place at her feet. No harm now in reading between the lines of his books and culling what is the common knowledge of his friends in the north, that he had to serve a long apprenticeship before he won her. For long his attachment was unreciprocated, though she was ever his loyal friend, and the volume called 'Unrequited Love' belongs to the period when he thought his life must be lived alone. The circumstances of their marriage are at once too beautiful and too painful to be dwelt on here. Enough to say that, should the particulars ever be given to the world, with the simple story of his life, a finer memorial will have been raised to him than anything in stone, such as we see a committee is already being formed to erect. We venture to propose as a title for his biography, 'The Story of the Perfect Lover.'"

Yes, that memorial committee was formed; but so soon do people forget the hero of yesterday's paper that only the secretary attended the first meeting, and he never called another. But here, five and twenty years later, is the biography, with the title changed. You may wonder that I had the heart to write it. I do it, I have some-

times pretended to myself, that we may all laugh at the stripling of a rogue, but that was never my reason. Have I been too cunning, or have you seen through me all the time? Have you discovered that I was really pitying the boy who was so fond of boyhood that he could not with years become a man, telling nothing about him that was not true, but doing it with unnecessary scorn in the hope that I might goad you into crying: "Come, come, you are too hard on him!"

Perhaps the manner in which he went to his death deprives him of these words. Had the castle gone on fire that day while he was at tea, and he perished in the flames in a splendid attempt to save the life of his enemy (a very probable thing), then you might have felt a little liking for him. Yet he would have been precisely the same person. I don't blame you, but you are a Tommy.

Grizel knew how he died. She found Lady Pippinworth's letter to him, and understood who the woman was; but it was only in hopes of obtaining the lost manuscript that she went to see her. Then Lady Pippinworth told her all. Are you sorry that Grizel knew? I am not sorry — I am glad. As a child, as a girl, and as a wife, the truth had been all she wanted, and she wanted it just the same when she was a widow. We have *a right* to know the truth; no right to ask anything *else* from God, but the right to ask that.

And to her latest breath she went on loving Tommy just the same. She thought everything out calmly for herself; she saw that there is no great man on this earth except the man who conquers self, and that in some the accursed thing which is in all of us may be so strong that to battle with it and be beaten is not altogether to fail. It is foolish to demand complete success of those we want to love. We should rejoice when they rise for a moment above themselves, and sympathize with them when they fall. In their heyday young lovers think each other perfect; but a nobler love comes when they see the failings also, and this higher love is so much more worth attaining to that they need not cry out though it has to be beaten into them with rods. So they learn humanity's limitations, and that the accursed thing to me is not the accursed thing to you; but all have it, and from this comes pity for those who have sinned, and the desire to help each other springs, for knowledge is sympathy, and sympathy is love, and to learn it the Son of God became a man.

And Grizel also thought anxiously about herself, and how from the time when she was the smallest girl she had longed to be a good woman and feared that perhaps she never should. And as she looked back at the road she had travelled, there came along it the little girl to judge her. She

came trembling, but determined to know th
and she looked at Grizel until she saw i
soul, and then she smiled, well pleased.

Grizel lived on at Double Dykes, helping
in the old way. She was too strong and fi
ture to succumb. Even her brightness can
to her. They sometimes wondered at the ser
her face. Some still thought her a little stan
for, though the pride had gone from her
distinction of manner grew upon her and n
seem a finer lady than before. There was
noticeable change, except that with the y
lost her beautiful contours and became a l
gular — the old maid's figure, I believe it
times called.

No one would have dared to smile a
become an old maid before some of th
men of Thrums. They were people wh
have suffered much for her, and all beca
had the courage to talk to them of som
before their marriage-day came round.
their young wives who had tidings to wh
her about the unborn she had the pretty i
they should live with beautiful thoughts,
these might become part of the child.

When Gavinia told this to Corp, he
and said, "I wonder God could hae h
heart."

"Life's a queerer thing," Gavinia replie

enough, "than we used to think it when we was bairns in the Den."

He spoke of it to Grizel. She let Corp speak of anything to her because he was so loyal to Tommy.

"You've given away a' your bonny things, Grizel," he said, "one by one, and this notion is the bonniest o' them a'. I'm thinking that when it cam' into your head you meant it for yoursel'."

Grizel smiled at him.

"I mind," Corp went on, "how when you was little you couldna see a bairn without rocking your arms in a waeful kind o' a way, and we could never thole the meaning o't. It just comes over me this minute as it meant that when you was a woman you would like terrible to hae bairns o' your ain, and you doubted you never should."

She raised her hand to stop him. "You see, I was not meant to have them, Corp," she said. "I think that when women are too fond of other people's babies they never have any of their own."

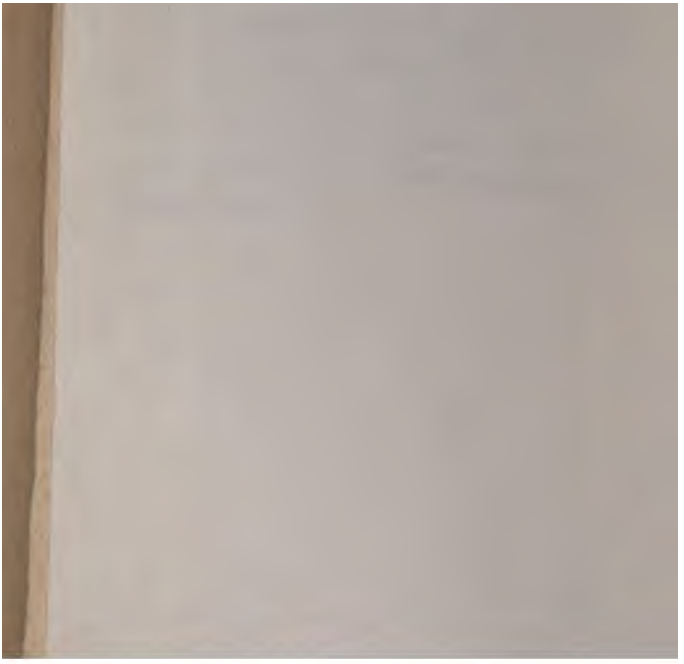
But Corp shook his head. "I dinna understand it," he told her, "but I'm sure you was meant to hae them. Something's gane wrang."

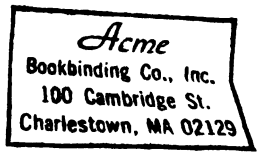
She was still smiling at him, but her eyes were wet now, and she drew him on to talk of the days when Tommy was a boy. It was sweet to Grizel to listen while Elspeth and David told her of the thousand things Tommy had done for her when

she was ill, but she loved best to talk with Corp of the time when they were all children in the Den. The days of childhood are the best.

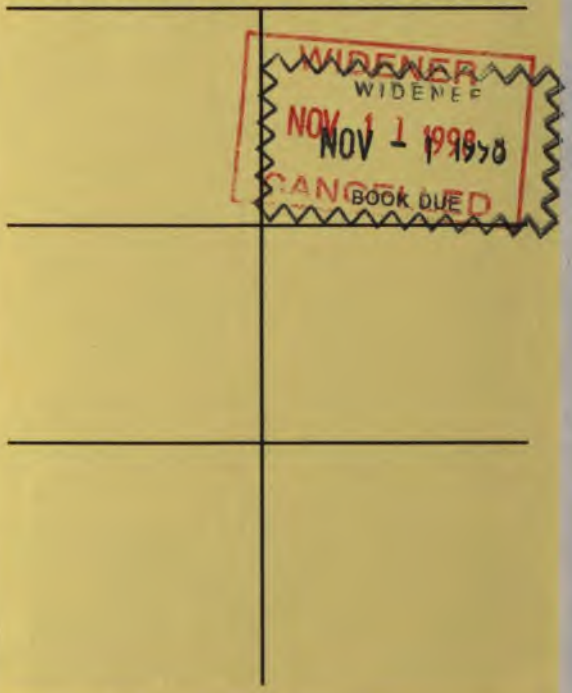
She lived so long after Tommy that she was almost a middle-aged woman when she died.

And so the Painted Lady's daughter has found a way of making Tommy's life the story of a perfect lover, after all. The little girl she had been comes stealing back into the book and rocks her arms joyfully, and we see Grizel's crooked smile for the last time.




Acme
Bookbinding Co., Inc.
100 Cambridge St.
Charlestown, MA 02129

3 2044 020 045 795

THE BORROWER WILL BE CHARGED AN OVERDUE FEE IF THIS BOOK IS NOT RETURNED TO THE LIBRARY ON OR BEFORE THE LAST DATE STAMPED BELOW. NON-RECEIPT OF OVERDUE NOTICES DOES NOT EXEMPT THE BORROWER FROM OVERDUE FEES.

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 (617) 495-2413